A MIRROR OF
THE HINDU PHILOSOPHICAL
SYSTEMS
NEHEMIAH NILAKANtha GASTRI GOREH
A MIRROR OF THE HINDU PHILOSOPHICAL SYSTEMS BY NEHEMIAH NILAKANTHA SÄSTRI GOREH

Translated from the original Hindi, printed and manuscript, by Fitz-Edward Hall, D.C.L., Oxon.

THIRD EDITION

THE CHRISTIAN LITERATURE SOCIETY FOR INDIA
LONDON, MADRAS AND COLOMBO
1911
PRINTED AT THE

S. P. C. K. PRESS, VEPERY, MADRAS

1911
PREFACE

This essay, in its original form, was published at Calcutta during the last year (1860). It consists of two volumes, in the Hindi language, and is entitled Shad-darśana-darpana, and 'Hindu Philosophy examined by a Benares Paṇḍit'. Scarcely a page of those volumes, however, is here reproduced without much change. To say nothing of less important alterations, whole chapters have been retrenched, and others have been inserted. The notes, throughout, are new. These, equally with the text, are the work of Paṇḍit Nilakantha; a very few excepted, which the nature of their contents will suffice to distinguish.

The Shad-darśana-darpana was addressed to a section of the author's countrymen. But the pride of the native literati forbids them to have dealings with their vernacular beyond the narrow range of social occasions. Moreover, the technicalities of philosophy, among the Hindus, are as yet drawn solely from the Sanskrit. Only a
meagre number of those technicalities are popularly employed: and, of such as are thus employed, not one in ten is fully comprehended by the vulgar. This being the case, the author, as might have been anticipated, discovered, that his Hindi labours had been to little purpose. As for this translation, it was undertaken, at the instance of an estimable missionary, mainly for the use of his fellow-evangelizers, and of Hindu students of English who may wish to acquaint themselves with the abstruser matters of their ancestral religion.

A familiarity with the sketches of Hindu philosophy drawn up by Colebrooke, will be found well-nigh indispensable as a preparation for understanding what is here presented to the reader. Later writers in the same department will, as a rule, be much more likely to mislead than to render any solid assistance. From this structure a reservation must, however, be made in favour of the Reverend Professor Banerjea, whose *Dialogues on the Hindu Philosophy*¹ are a mine of new and authentic indications. What from the elucidations of that learned gentleman, and those of Pandit Nilakantha, it should seem, that, in order really to penetrate the mysteries of Hinduism, we could scarcely do better than

¹ This valuable work is published by the Christian Literature Society, Madras, and can be obtained from any bookseller.
commit ourselves to the guidance of Christianized Brâhmins.

There are scores of terms, belonging to the nomenclature of Hindu philosophy, precise equivalents of which have not yet been wrought out for us with the help of the Latin and Greek. Of the terms in question there are not a few which the translator of these pages has been the first to dress in a European garb; and, that he has had other than moderate success, is more than he can venture to suppose. Colebrooke and his successors have, indeed, elaborated many close and felicitous renderings. Still, they have left much unattempted, and something to be amended. Had the translator departed from 'nature', as representing \textit{prakriti},\footnote{Originant' might answer, or 'evolvant': and 'originate', or 'evolute', for \textit{vrikriti}.} he would hardly have done amiss. Again, 'modification' conveys a very much.

\footnote{The Greeks agreed with the cosmogonies of the East in driving all sensible forms from the indistinguishable. The latter we find designated as the \textit{τὸ ἄμορφον}, the \textit{ἄδεια ἀρχοντικὸν}, \textit{τὸ χάος}, as the essentially unintelligible, yet necessarily presumed, basis or subposition of all positions. That it is, scientifically considered, an indiscernible idea for the human mind, just as the mathematical point, etc., for the geometricalian; of this the various systems of geologists and cosmogonists, from Burnet to La Place, afford strong presumption. As an idea, it must be interpreted as a striving of the mind to distinguish being from \textit{existence},—or potential being, the ground of being containing the possibility of \textit{existence}, from being \textit{actualized}. Coleridge's \textit{Notes and Lectures on Shakespeare}, vol. ii. p. 197.}
nearer conception of vritti—denoting several of the ‘evolutions’ of the ‘internal organ’—than is conveyed by ‘affection’. These and many other improvements were thought of when, unfortunately, it was too late, save at the risk of entailing confusion, to introduce them.

A glossary has been omitted solely from want of leisure to prepare one. In fact, the necessity which lay upon the translator, of executing his task against time, if he executed it at all, should excuse many of the defects which will be seen to mark his performance. Pandit Nilakantha’s disquisitions were certainly well worthy of being

1 See pp. 82, 84 and 254, for the characteristics of vritti.

2 A single one was introduced. Between pp. 61 and 155, ‘sentence’ and its conjugates are frequently put for chaitanya, etc. See the fourth note at p. 257. It was Colebrooke, Professor Wilson, and others who herein set the example which the translator for a while unadvisedly followed.

In a considerable number of places, ‘God’ is substituted for Isvara. On this point, as regards the Sankhya and the Yoga, see the Sankhyasara—in the Bibliotheca Indica—Preface, p. 2, foot-note.

‘Soul,’ in an accommodated sense, has been chosen to stand for jiva or jivatman. See the notes at pp. 4 and 288-91. In the latter part of III, 5, inadvertently, and yet naturally enough, ‘soul’ will be found used, more than once, for ‘the unspiritual part of the soul,’—as a Hindu would be compelled to express himself. At p. 320, I, 5 ‘soul’ occurs twice, where ‘spirit’ is intended. In the ninth line of the next page, in place of ‘Isvara, no less than the soul,’ read ‘Isvara no less than every other individuated spirit.’ A few more similar mistakes, the result of unavoidable haste, are noted at the end of the volume.
brought before the public. Even the most advanced of European Sanskrit scholars may there-from read instruction. To such, and to many others who will value them, they might have remained unknown for years, or altogether, had not the translator done for them what he has here done to the best of his opportunities.

This work has had the great advantage of being criticized, in its proof-sheets, by the Reverend Dr. Kay, of Bishop's College, Calcutta. By the obliging assistance of the learned and acute Principal, both the author and the translator have profited largely.

CAMP BILAHARI
JIBULPORE, DISTRICT
Christmas, 1861

Note: The First Edition was published by the Calcutta Christian Tract and Book Society. The Second Edition was issued with the kind consent of the Society's Committee. This Third Edition is a verbatim reprint, no changes being made in it except the correction of printer's errors and an endeavour a greater exactness in the transliteration of the Sanskrit.
PREFATORY NOTE

Explanations of some Technical Terms

The Mirror of the Hindu Philosophical Systems was translated by Dr. Fitz-Edward Hall from the Hindi. The author, in a Paper on 'The Hindu Philosophies', in the Indian Church Quarterly Review, for April, 1891, states that the technical terms of Hindu Philosophy are not always correctly rendered in English. Some of the principal, as explained in the above Paper, are therefore given below:

'An atom (paramāṇu) is the minutest portion of earth, water, etc.; it is invisible, intangible, in short, inappreciable by any of the senses; and it is incapable of further division. There is no word for Akāśa in English. The word "ether", by which it is sometimes translated, is misleading. It is like space in every respect except this, that it is imagined to be the material cause of sound. Manus is translated by English authors by "mind". But manus is not mind. It is a material internal organ. Akāśa, kālu (time) and manus are believed to be substances (dravya).

It is the custom of English authors to translate prakṛiti by "Nature". Prakṛiti is composed of three material substances, called sattva, rajas, and tamas; these words are translated by English authors, "goodness", "passion", and "darkness" respectively. Who will suppose that goodness, passion and darkness are material substances out of which the whole material universe is evolved?'
Sattva, rajas, and tamas, in the Sānkhya system, are so called not because they are themselves goodness, passion, and darkness, but from the effects which they are supposed to produce. The effects of sattva are good; such as clearness of understanding, calmness, peace, etc. The effects of rajas are passion, attachment to the world and its pleasures. The effects of tamas are stupidity. I have hazarded some speculations that, by such words as prakriti, sattva, rajas, tamas, buddhi (intellect),ākára (self-consciousness), etc., different things were originally understood, the very things which those terms signify, but gradually their meaning was changed, and the authors have come to understand by them quite different things. See Mirror of the Hindu Philosophical Systems, p. 112.

As the Sānkhyas say that the universe is evolved from prakriti, so the Vedántists say that it is evolved from maya, or ajñana, that is ignorance. Maya (illusion) or ignorance is the material cause of the universe. Like prakriti, it is composed of sattva, rajas, and tamas.

The Sānkhya and the Vedánta teach that apprehension, will, activity, pleasure, pain, etc., are not qualities of the soul, but are vrittis of the antahkarana, and they are only reflected in the soul. Vritti is an affection of the antahkarana, which is evolved from it, and is a modification (parinama) of it; just as the antahkarana itself is evolved from prakriti and is a modification of it. Now they say that the antahkarana is the internal organ as its name signifies.
CONTENTS

Preface ........................................ vii
Prefatory Note ................................ xiii

SECTION I

CHAP. I. On the uses of an examination of the Hindu Philosophical Systems; with an enumeration of these systems, and a sketch of the plan to be pursued in the present treatise ........................................ 3

CHAP. II. Of the dogmas common to nearly all the Systems; and of the dogmas peculiar to each of them, the Vedanta excepted. ........................................ 13

CHAP. III. An Examination of the Sāṅkhya Doctrines, (1) of the Non-existence of God, as concurrent with the Belief in Virtue, Vice, and their Fruits; and (2) of the Acceptance of the Veda as having had no Consensus Author, and as being irrecusably authoritative ........................................ 28

CHAP. IV. Examination of the Sāṅkhya Dogma, that Nature is the Material Cause of the World ........................................ 109

CHAP. V. Examination of the Sāṅkhya Dogma, that Apprehension, Will, Activity, Happiness, Misery, and other qualities, do not appertain to the Soul ........................................ 117

CHAP. VI. Brief Consideration of one Topic of the Mīmāṃsā, with a few Remarks on the Intellectual Peculiarities of the Pundits, and on their Style of Reasoning. 111

SECTION II

CHAP. I. Briefly prefatory with an Examination of the Nyāya and Vaiśeṣika Doctrine—touching God ........................................ 151

CHAP. II. Examination of the Nyāya and Vaiśeṣika Tenets relative to the Soul; namely, that it had no Beginning, that it is All-pervading, and that it takes Birth again and again ........................................ 165

CHAP. III. Examination of the Cause, laid down in the Nyāya, Vaiśeṣika, and the other Systems, of the Wretchedness of the Soul, that is, its Bondage, and the Means of escaping therefrom; a Succinct Description of the True
Nature of Virtue and Vice; and a Criticism of the Views of the Systematists touching Virtue and Vice, their Consequences, etc. ........................................ 141

CHAP. IV Examination of the Views concerning the State of Emancipation, professed, in common, by the Naiyāyikas and by the Vaiśešikas. ........................................ 209

SECTION III

CHAP. I. Description of the Three Sorts of Existence held in the Vedānta; the Key to a Right Understanding of that Scheme of Philosophy ........................................ 247

CHAP. II. Summary of the Vedānta System ........................................ 242

CHAP. III. Examination of the Vedānta Views concerning the Supreme Spirit ........................................ 251

CHAP. IV. Proof that the Existence of Brahma cannot be deduced from the Position of the Vedānta, that the Internal Organ requires an Illuminator ........................................ 242

CHAP. V. Argument to show, that the Brahma of the Vedāntins, as being quite Void of Qualities, is reduced to nothing ........................................ 301

CHAP. VI. Strictures on the Position of the Vedāntins, that the World is False, and a Reply to those who suppose, that the Vedāntins' Views respecting External Things accord with those of Berkeley ........................................ 322

CHAP. VII. The Soul, being subject to Ignorance, cannot, as the Vedāntins hold, be One with the Supreme Spirit; a Description of Ignorance, and an Argument to show, that the Denial of the Soul's Identity with Brahma is not set aside by taking the Epithet of False, as applied to Ignorance, in the Acceptation of perishable ........................................ 333

CHAP. VIII. Criticism of the Vedānta Tenet of the Falseness of Ignorance, as set forth in Standard Treatises, and as held by well-read Advocates of the Theory ........................................ 350

CHAP. IX. Examination of the Tenet of the Vedāntins, that there are Three Kinds of Existence; Ignorance cannot be False; and therefore, the Ignorant Soul cannot be one with the Supreme Spirit ........................................ 350

CHAP. X. Examination of the Vedāntin's Emancipation; Proof that the Vedānta does not deserve to be called Theistic; and a few Words on the Faculty of Judgement, its Power, and its Use ........................................ 373
SECTION I
CHAPTER I

On the uses of an examination of the Hindu Philosophical Systems; with an enumeration of these systems, and a sketch of the plan to be pursued in the present treatise.

I propose, in this book, to discuss succinctly the six Philosophical Systems (Darsanas) of the Hindus. The fundamental authorities of the Hindu religion are the Vedas, the Smritis, the Puranas, etc., not the Systems. Of these the staple is argument. But they profess to derive their views from the Veda and other sacred books. Independent authority as to those views they disclaim. Hence it might be supposed that, in examining the Hindu religion, a discussion of the Systems

1 The laws of the Hindus, civil and religious, are, by them, believed to be alike founded on revelation, a portion of which has been preserved in the very words revealed, and constitutes the Vedas, esteemed by them, as sacred writ. Another portion has been preserved by inspired writers, who had revelations present to their memory, and who have recorded holy precepts, for which a divine sanction is to be presumed. This is termed Smriti, recollection (remembered law), in contradistinction to Sruti, audition (revealed law).1 Colebrooke.

Rather, a code of memorial law is meant by Smriti, as in the text. Again, any composition of a man supposed to be inspired may be denominated Smriti.
would be quite unnecessary. Such discussion has, however, these advantages:—

1. The six Systems are not held by the Hindus to be the work of ordinary men, but of Rishis:¹ and they are adjudged equal in rank with the Smritis, the Purānas, etc., which are reputed to have a similar authorship. If then, on investigation, errors are proved to exist in the former, doubt must attach to the credit of the latter. When it is shown that the very Rishis are wrong, and made gross mistakes in writings by which they undertake to communicate to the world the knowledge of truth and the means of salvation, who can esteem any statement deserving of confidence, simply because it emanated from a Rishi?

2. Though vulgar Hindus are indifferent to, and unacquainted with, the dogmas established in the Systems yet those dogmas are highly considered by the learned. To them those dogmas, concerning God, the world, its origin, the soul,² its bondage, emancipation, and so on, are as it were the root and life of the Hindu religion; while the narratives, and tales, and ritual matters of the Vedas, Smritis, Purānas, etc., may be viewed as its branches. To the learned so excellent do those doctrines appear, and so fully ac-

¹ Primarily, in the Hindu mythology, Rishi signifies a holy sage to whom some portion of the Veda is said to have been revealed. In a vague sense, the word denotes an inspired man.

² Throughout these pages, 'soul' is used, in an accommodated sense, to translate jīva; a term not applied to Brahma and Īsvara, while it is employed of men, gods, and all other persons. As these have souls, so, it is thought, have all things animal and vegetable.
cordant with reason, that they cling to them with the strongest affection, and the cord of this affection holds them fast to the Hindu faith. It is, therefore, my firm conviction, that if they saw those doctrines to be faulty, and discarded them, they would be led to lose all regard for Hinduism. And such a result would, with God's blessing, attend candid inquiry.

3 There is no question that the authors of the Systems, and their great expositors, were, in their way, most intelligent and learned men, and acute investigators. But, since, in spite of all the energy they threw into their search after truth they fell into serious errors, it is evident how extremely difficult it is for men to arrive, by their own wisdom, at the true knowledge of God. Add to this, that sages, as in India, so in all other countries, have herein failed. Hence, that System; it is established, is divine, which propounds correct views of God and of His right path. My prayer is, that God may have mercy upon you. Relinquishing partiality, and with a desire for the salvation of your souls, as you would reach the right path, may you ponder what I am about to set forth.

The six Systems are the Nyāya, Vaiśeshika, Sānkhya, Yoga, Mīmāṃśā, and Vedānta. They are also called the six Śastras.1 The Sānkhya and the Yoga agree in all essentials; save that the former does not acknowledge God, while the latter does. Hence, occasionally, in Hindu books, both are denominated Sānkhya; the one atheistic, and the other theistic. In many

1 By this word, in its wider acceptation, is denoted a body of teaching, revealed, or of human origin, concerned with any subject whatsoever.
places, also, the Mīmāṃsā is styled the prior Mīmāṃsā, and the Vedānta, the latter Mīmāṃsā. The reason of this is, that they are alike concerned with discussing statements of the Veda. The prior Mīmāṃsā pertains to its ritual section; and the latter Mīmāṃsā, to its scientific section. This section, being at the end (anta) of the Veda, is named Vedānta. Thousands of authors, from remote antiquity down to recent times, have written treatises on the six Systems. Among these are some known by the name of Sutras, or Aphorisms, which are reckoned the basis of all the rest, and are referred, by the Hindus, to ṛṣis. Thus, the Nyāya is ascribed to Gotama, or Akṣhapāda; the Vaiśeṣika, to Kaṇāda, or Kanabhaṅgaka; the Sāṃkhya, to Kapila; the Yoga, to Patañjali; the Mīmāṃsā, to Jaimini; and the Vedānta, to Bādarāyana.

The plan which I have resolved upon for criticizing the six Systems is this: In the first place I shall exhibit those doctrines which, with slight deductions, are common to all the Systems; and then those distinctive doctrines of all the Systems, save the Vedānta, which are especially worthy of examination. In the third section I shall canvass the characteristic doctrines of the Vedānta. The distinctive tenets of the other five Systems I shall deal with in this wise. I have remarked above that the Sāṃkhya and the Yoga consent in all important respects but one. On the ground of this general unanimity, I shall treat of their doctrines together. Then I shall speak of one or two articles of the Mīmāṃsā which are deserving of atten-

1 Purva Mīmāṃsā and Uttara Mīmāṃsā.
tion. As for the Nyāya and the Vaiśeshika, the learned recognize a close affinity between them. They concede that, for the most part, nothing found in the one is repugnant to anything occurring in the other, and that, in fact, they supplement each other.\(^1\) Indeed, Hindus who nowadays write on the Nyāya, combine the Vaiśeshika with it.\(^2\) The discrepant opinions of these two Systems I shall pass by unnoticed. Their other opinions I shall take account of conjointly. An

\(^1\) The seven Vaiśeshika predicaments are thus spoken of by Viśvanātha Panchānana Bhaṭṭāchāryya: एते च पदार्थं वैशेषिक-क्रसिद्रः नैयायिकानामय्यविद्धः। Siddhānta-muktāvali on the first couplet of the Bhāṣā-parichchheda. 'And these categories are well known in the Vaiśeshika, and are not opposed to the views of the Naiyāyikas.'

\(^2\) काण्डद्वयतयमत्योवद्द्वितविनिरस्यदाय | अन्नभेंट विद्वद्वा रचितस्तर्कस्यः॥

'The Tarka-sangraha, i.e. Tract on the Categories, was composed by the learned Annam Bhaṭṭa, with a view to rendering the uninstructed proficient in the doctrines of Kaṇḍa and of the Nyāya.'

Thus ends the Tarka-sangraha, a Nyāya manual. The couplet has been translated in accordance with Annam Bhaṭṭa's expanation of it in his Tarkadīpikā.

Such books as that just cited, the Muktāvali, and many more might fairly—in respect of their subject-matter, and of the fact that they ignore the Nyāya aphorisms—be entitled to the appellation of Vaiśeshika treatises, were it not that, on topics where the Nyāya and the Vaiśeshika deviate, as concerning the kinds of proof, the doctrines of the former are strenuously maintained as against those of the latter.
examination of all the Systems will then follow, in the manner about to be stated.

Many and voluminous are the books concerned with the six Systems; and they handle a large variety of topics. I do not by any means undertake to pass all these topics under review, but only such as are most considerable. Many of them are common to all the Systems; while as to some the Systems differ among themselves very seriously. Hence, if we investigate any one System thoroughly, our decisions will affect no small portion of the others. To me the Nyāya and the Vaiśeshika seem most reasonable of all. Not to mention their claims to preference on other accounts, they acknowledge a God, eternal and omnipotent; and so are superior to the Sānkhya, and to the Mīmāṃsā, which deny God; and to the Vedānta as well, which identifies souls with Brahma. I shall therefore apply a searching scrutiny to the whole of the leading opinions of the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika. First of all, however, I shall dispose of a few peculiar doctrines of the Sānkhya and Mīmāṃsā, which call for observation. As was before said, those dogmas of the Yoga, in respect of which it deviates from the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika, will be included in treating of the Sānkhya; and I shall dilate on the specialities of the Vedānta in the last section of the volume.

It should be borne in mind that, in this work, I shall present the tenets of the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika, not simply as they are expressed in the aphorisms, but as they have been developed by authors of a later date, both ancient and modern. For, though the Hindus think otherwise, I suspect a difference
between the aphorisms and the treatises founded on them. For instance, these treatises dwell at much length on the subject of God, and adduce numerous arguments in proof of His existence. Indeed, it is ordinarily believed, in the present day, that the capital end of the two Systems in question is to prove that there is a Deity; but it is a singular fact that nothing of this transpires in their aphorisms. In only a single

1 In a work of modern date, where an atheist is represented as having put to silence antagonists belonging to diverse Hindu persuasions, a Tarkika for Naiyayika is looked to, by the company, as the last refuge in defence of the belief in a God.

इयाकथ्यं चक्तिः वेदान्तिनि सर्व तार्किकद्वन्दमवलोक्यन्ति म ।

निवासंमूलतुरगमः MS. fol. 1, verso. 'When the Vedántin, hearing this, was confounded, they all turned their eyes towards the face of the Tarkika.'

The following couplet, which has not been traced beyond and tradition, at once illustrates the irreverence of the Hindu mind, and shows that the Nyaya is prized as the stronghold of theism. The verses are reported—falshly, it is hoped to have been uttered by Udayana Acharya, a very celebrated ancient Naiyayika; in fact, the foremost of Naiyayika writers after Gotama, the author of the aphorism, and Vatsyayana, his scholiast, both of whom are reputed inspired. It is said that Udayana, after the trouble of a pilgrimage to the temple of Jagannath at Puri, found the door shut on his arrival. Upon this, the impatient logician thus delivered himself, addressing inhospitable divinity:

पौश्यर्मठमत्तोद्धिति मामव्रजाय वर्तसि ।

उपस्थितेषु बौद्धेषु मदधीना तव स्थित: ॥

'Thou art drunk with the inebriation of majesty; me thou scornest. But let the Buddhas show themselves, and upon me will depend thy very existence.'
one of the Nyāya aphorisms do we find God so much as named; and it does not indubitably appear from that, that the author of the aphorisms believed in Him. In that place, God is declared to be the maker of the world. But it should be known, that the writer of the Nyāya-sūtra-vṛtti offers two interpretations of the aphorism referred to, and of the two that succeed it. According to the first of those interpretations, the first of the three aphorisms does not enunciate the view of the author, but is given as the view of an opponent; and the two ensuing aphorisms are for the purpose of refuting it. The expositor, however, understands that his author did not intend to deny the divine origination of the world, but only to assert that God cannot be the maker of the world, independently of the works of souls. At the same time, the expositor states that, by some, the purport of the three aphorisms is taken otherwise, that is to say, as designed to establish God’s existence.¹ In a matter so beset with doubt, it is difficult to arrive at certainty.

¹ The three aphorisms referred to will here be given, with the drift of the commentator’s remarks.

The first is: ईश्वर: कारणं पुरुषकर्मिक्यः पर्यावरणाः। ‘God is the cause, since the works of souls (puruṣa) are found to be ineffectual.’

This, in the first place, is assumed to be asserted by an opponent who rejects the dogma—taken for granted, by the commentator, to be held by Gotama—that God and the works of souls are, in concert, the cause of the universe. On one supposition, the opponent is, to all appearance, a Vedāntin, whose meaning is, ‘God is the sole cause,’ i.e. agreeably to one Vedānta view, ‘sole and material cause’ of the universe, and, agreeably to another view, undoubtedly Vedāntic, its ‘sole and
And, again, the name of God nowhere shows itself in the Vaiseshika Aphorisms. In a few of them there illusory-material cause. By 'sole cause is meant 'irrespective of the works of souls.' 'Inefficual'; viz. on some occasions. 'The works of souls are found to be so. Hence, they are not to be accounted a cause.

But it is to a second interpretation that the commentator evidently accords his preference. This interpretation supposes an objecter to urge simply, that God alone, since the works of souls are inefficual, is the author of the universe, independently of such works.

Gotama replies: न पृष्ठकर्मभावे फलानिष्ट्वेत् । 'Not so; since, in default of the works of souls, there is no production of effects.'

In explication, the commentator argues, resisting the Vedantin, that as much as God, in his system, is devoid of volition if He alone were the cause of the universe, everything would be produced at all times, and be uniform in character. The works of souls must, by consequence, be conjoined with God, in order to an origination of the universe.

Anticipating the objection, that, if such weight be attached, as in the last aphorism, to the works of souls, resort must be had to the fiction, that the efforts of souls never miss of their end, the Gishi pronounces: तत्कारितवादहेतु । 'The efforts of souls are, at times, no cause of effects, because the non-production thereof is caused by that default of works.' That is to say, when a man, for instance, is unsuccessful, his failure is due to want of merit.

In conclusion, the commentator informs us that the construction of the aphorisms, adopted by some, is as follows:—Gotama's purpose is to establish God's existence. He begins by laying down that God is author of the universe; and he repels the notion that souls can be so; as they sometimes fail of bringing their efforts to bear, and thus prove themselves to fall short of omniscience. A Mimamsaka antagonist rejoins, in the second aphorism, that it is not so. But for the works of souls,
is a pronominal prefix—tad—which the commentators explain as referring to God. But I do not mean to enter upon this nice matter. I shall consider the Nyāya and the Vaiśeṣika doctrines as they are set forth by their expounders, and understood by the Pundits.

he contends, effects cannot be produced; therefore, the good and evil works of soul suffice, through merit and demerit, to account for the universe, and God may be dispensed with. To this the answer of Gotama is, that the works of souls cannot of themselves be the cause of the universe, since they are effectual only under God’s directing.

See the Nyāya-sāstra-vṛtti, pp. 176-7; Book iv. aphorisms 13, 20, and 21.

1 The third aphorism, for one, is as follows: तद्वन्दनादि नायाय-प्रामाण्यम्। Śankara Misra says of this: तदित्यन्याप्रकाश्यमपि प्रतिक्कर्तयेतरं परामपरति। 'The tad refers to God—though He is not previously mentioned—because of His being well-known.' According to this comment the aphorism signifies: 'The Veda is authoritative, as being God’s declaration.' But Śankara, uncertain whether his first exposition be tenable, gives, as a second: यद्य तदि गुणितं सन्तिहितं धर्ममेव परामपरति। 'Or, the tad refers to “virtue”; because juxtaposed.' In this case, the meaning is, that the Veda has authority, by reason that it treats of virtue. Dharma, ‘virtue’, is the last word of the preceding aphorism, the second. Vaiśeṣika-sātrapakāra, MS, fol. 3, recto.
CHAPTER II

By the deities common to nearly all the Systems; and of the deities peculiar to each of them, the Veda alone excepted.

I shall first speak of those points on which almost all the Systems are consentaneous.

It appears, even on the most cursory inspection of the Systems that the Mimāṃsā apart their end is to inculcate expedients for salvation.¹

¹ साह्यशाख्रय तु पुरुषार्थतन्माध्यतिप्रकृतिगुप्तप्रवचनविवेकावेन मूळयो विषय: | Sankhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, p. 5. ‘But of the Sankhya system the foremost matters are, the aim of the soul, namely; emancipation, and the means of compassing it, i.e. the discrimination of soul from nature.’

अथ शाख्य तस्मां प्रयोजनमयम्: | Nyaya-sūtra-cṛtti, p. 198. ‘Now the paramount purpose of this system is emancipation.’

अस्यान्तर्पंयोऽऽहाय आन्मैकत्वानिवचारप्रतिपत्त्य सर्वेदान्तिक आरुप्यन्ते | Śankara Achārya on the Brahma sūtra: Bibliotheca Indica, No. 64, p. 22. ‘For the destruction of this misconception, the source of all evil, and for the acquisition of
Again, according to all of them alike, ignorance is the knowledge of the oneness of spirit, are all Vedanta disquisitions taken in hand. The commentator, Ramananda, observes that the acquisition indicated leads to emancipation.

To anything beyond a very superficial acquaintance with the Mimamsa the author does not pretend; and yet he is not, on this score, at all in arrear of ninety and nine per cent in every hundred. In seven paragraphs, beginning with that to which this note is subjoined, as many articles of belief are reckoned up. So far as he is aware, the last three are held, without any deviation from their general character, in the Mimamsa, whereas the first four are, he believes, wholly rejected by it. The Mimamsa scheme of philosophy, as laid out by the most accredited writers on it, is not known to deal with emancipation and other high spiritual topics. Only some recent authors, it would seem, hold a different language, and would raise the Mimamsa to a level with the other more conspicuous Systems. Thus, Lalgakshi Bhaskara, in his Purva-mimamsartha-sangraha, has these words:

इष्टर्कर्णुद्वरव्रतियमाणस्तुः निःश्रेयसहेतुः।
न च तदर्कर्णुद्वरव्रतिवनुष्ठाने प्रमाणाभव इति वाच्यम्।

यत् करोपि यद्भासि यत् जुहौपि ददासि यत्।

यत् तपस्यासि कौन्तियतन चरुक्ष्ण मदर्कर्णम्॥

इति भगवद्वतास्मौतेन प्रमाणवादृः।

"When it, duty, is performed with intent of oblation to God, it becomes the cause of emancipation. And let it not be said that there is no authority for observance of duty with such intent; since there is, as such, in that sacred record, the Bhagavadgita, this precept: "Whatever thou dost, whatever thouatest, whatever thou offerest in fire, whatever thou bestowest away, whatever austerity thou practicest, Kaunteya, do it as an oblation to me."' See the Bhagavadgita, ix, 27.

How, it is obvious to enquire, since the Mimamsa is atheistic, can this be other than an innovation?
the chief cause of bondage.¹ And ignorance is this,

¹ विगम्यादत्तवज्ञानादिध्यते वन्धः | Tattva-kaumudi, p. 44.

'Bondage is held, in our System, to result from the reverse of knowledge, i.e. from ignorance of the twenty-five principles.'

तन् तस्मादस्य द्वेषसामान्यर्द्धस्य द्व: वनमप्रबृजिद्रोहसिद्धवज्ञानानमुत्तरोत्तरायणे नदन्तरा-
पायादपम: | Second aphorism of the Nyāya-sūtra. 'Misery, birth, activity, defect, error; when any one of these is removed, all that precede it go with it; and then ensues emancipation. A beginning can be made, however, with ignorance only. This is the ground of all, and the cause of misery.

From the third quotation in the last note it is clear that the Vedānta considers misconception, that is to say, misapprehension, to be the great cause of bondage.

By 'ignorance' we are not to understand the absence of knowledge, but erroneous apprehension, misconception. In the onomastica of Amara and Hema-chandra, the synonym of व्यक्त is aham-mati. अह्मामति is aham-mati. अंमामति: | Amara-kośa.

अविद्यार्धक्षमत्यज्ञाने | Hatma-kośa, Kshara Svāmin says, in his gloss on Amara: 'The notion "I" is called aham-mati, because there is, in it, the conceit of that's being soul which is not soul: namely, the mind, the body, and the like; as is taught in the Systems. The Sanskrit runs: अह्मित्वस्य मन्नमप्रबृजिद्रोहसिद्धवज्ञानानमुत्तरोत्तरायणे-
भिमानान् | Clearly, this is not mere want of knowledge or right
apprehension, but something positive. V. V. M. says: विपर्ययोज्ञानमविया सा बुद्धिमयः | Tattvādāh, p. 41

'Wrong notion is ignorance, nescience, which is a property of the intellect.' In like manner says Vijnana Bhikshu: अत प्रांच्च विद्यविरोधविज्ञानांतरसमिक योग-मात्ये व्यासदेव: प्रवेनास्वदृश्यम् | Sankhya-pranachandra-bhashya, p. 38. 'And, for this very reason, nescience is not a negation, but a distinct sort of consciousness, opposed to true science. Thus it has been laboriously established, in the Yoga-bhashya, by the divine Vyasa.' A little before this we read:

न पुनर्विवेकोऽवस्थाभावात् ! 'And non-discrimination, in this System, is not simply a negation.' 'Non-discrimination'—is, on the showing of the context, one with avidya, 'nescience' or 'false knowledge.' The author of the Nyaya-sutraavat-sat at p. 108. विपर्ययो मिथयाज्ञानापरपयो यथार्थविश्वासिन्य: इ

'Wrong notion, equivalent to which is false apprehension, is incorrect conviction.' As mithya-jnana is used to signify that special misapprehension which stops release from the world, so, in the Sanskrit vocabularies, mithyamati, 'false conception,' is given to express misapprehension in general. Thus Amara and Hemachandra: भान्तिभिन्नामतिर्भर्मः !

In short, whenever the words ajnana mithya-jnana, avidya, etc., occur in the technical use of the Systematists, they must be taken to denote something positive, and not negations. Dr. Ballantyne says, 'According to the Naiyayikas, ajnana is merely the privation (abhava) of jnana.'—Christianty contrasted with Hindu Philosophy, etc., p. xxxiv. That ajnana is so, in the language of the Nyaya, when it represents the great impediment to emancipation, is an allegation which requires to be substantiated.

All the Systems hold misapprehension to be the cause of bondage. For the Vedanta view of ajnana and avidya, see the third Section.
that the soul, though distinct from the mind,\(^1\) the senses, and the body, identifies itself with them.

\(^1\) It is only to avoid the introduction of a strange Sanskrit word into the text, that I have consented to replace *manas* by ‘mind’. The *manas* is averred, in all the six Systems, to be an internal organ, the organ of cognition; as the eye is the organ of sight. It has dimension, but no other quality of matter, and, except in the Nyāya, it is perishable. It must be carefully distinguished from the soul of which it is only an instrument.

*Manas*, in the Sāṅkhya, the Yoga, and the Vedānta, is also used in a special sense, for a portion of the internal organ. The other portions are, in the Sāṅkhya, *budhi* and *ahankaara*, ‘intellect’ and ‘egoism’, in the Yoga and Vedānta, these and *chitta*, ‘thinking’. When severally considered, each of them is called an organ. They are not operations. The renderings—and they are the ordinary ones—therefore convey but a very imperfect idea of the original expressions.

Though all the Systems style the *manas* an organ, the Sāṅkhya, the Yoga, and the Vedānta do not in fact treat it as such, the Nyāya and the Vaiṣeṣika do. No opinion is here pronounced as to the Mimāṃsā.

Dr. Ballantyne says, for the instruction of the Hindus, ‘But our opinion is, that there belongs to the human soul a certain natural incapacity (*udalhi*) to grasp cognitions simultaneously; and a soul thus distinguished is spoken of as a mind’ (*Synopsis of Science*, second edition, p. 6). Thus he thus puts into Sanskrit:

अस्वस्मनं तु जीवायमनो युगपच्चानाजानाधारणो नाभावचिक्रियः ओषधिचिराचिरीचिरीकृति तद्हि प्रिति

‘Mind’ is here translated by *manas*: and what must be the Hindu’s inference? Is anything correspondent, even by approach, to the *manas* recognized in our metaphysics?

It is taught, in all the Systems, that the soul’s identifying itself with the mind, the organs, the body, etc., constitutes that misapprehension which entails bondage. But the Sāṅkhya, the Yoga, and the Vedānta go further. According to the first two, to regard the soul as one with nature is also a misapprehension bearing the same fruit. This is plain from the
From this identification it is that it conceives of some things as its own, and of other things as belonging subsequent passages. नन्द प्रकृतिपूजयाविवेक एवं चेतन संग्राम- द्वारा वचनेन्द्रस्याविवेक एवं च सोयश्चेतनसमग्रामसः- 
चेतायि सोऽकः स्यान।

तच च श्रुतिमूर्तिवाचिक्षविवेक्षमिति तत् सह
प्रतिवेक्षाद्वाचिक्षविवेकस्य नदानेह द्वाराम्। ६७॥

पुष्पे प्रतिवेक्षकान्त कारणात् योनिस्याविवेको बुद्धावाचिक्षविवेकाभिविवेको जायते कारणकारणस्य कारणस्यसाक्षात् सर्वस्य विवेकमुलः-
कथा तथा प्रतिवेक्षकान्तहानासन्यवस्य द्वारामिवधः॥

थथा शरीरादाम्नि विविधे शरीरकार्यं एवाद्विविहनेऽविवेको न
सम्भवति तथा शूलस्यवदितिं: प्रतिवेक्ष पुष्पे विविधं तत्काः-
येश्च विविज्ञातितर्थेऽव बुद्धावाचिक्षविवेकमानो नोक्तस्यसहति
तालम्ययायात् कारणनाशाच चेति भावः। Sāṅkhya-pravachana-
bhāṣya, pp. 40-1; including the 57th aphorism of the Sāṅkhya, Book i. 'But', says an objector, 'if the mere non-discrimination of nature and soul be, through the conjunction of intellect and soul, the cause of bondage, and if the mere discrimination of them be the cause of emancipation, it will follow that, though the conceit of the body and the like being one with soul remained, there would be emancipation; and this is opposed to the Veda, the Smṛitis, and reason.' To this it is replied, by an aphorism: 'Of the non-discrimination of soul from other things, which is because of the non-discrimination of soul from nature, there is the extinction, on that of the latter.'
to others; and that, through the body, it receives pleasure from this object, and pain from that. Hence

'Non-discrimination from other things,' the non-discrimination of soul from intellect, etc., which results from non-discrimination of soul from nature, as its cause—non-discrimination from effects being itself an effect, and having for its root eternal non-discrimination of the soul from the cause of that effect, nature—is necessarily extinguished, on the extinction of non-discrimination of soul from nature. Such is the meaning. As, when soul is discriminated from body, non-discrimination of the effects of the body, colour and so on, from the soul is impossible, so, when soul is discriminated, by its unchangeableness and other properties, from nature, egoism cannot have place, identifying soul with intellect, etc., possessing the properties of mutability and the like, which are effects of it, nature, there being a party of reason, and there being extinction of cause. This is the tenor.

अव्यक्तमहद्वृत्तिरपश्चिद्विधिविद्यात्

विध्यां नकारकृतात् एवत्तवादद्वृत्तिनामन्तरः

देहादिनामेतद्रूककार्यवाचः

Vijnana Bhikshu's Patañjala-bhāṣya-vārttika, MS. fol. 12, recto. 'The notion, in these eight, which are not soul, namely, in the unmanifested nature, in the great principle, i.e. intellect, in the organ of egoism and in the two tenuous particles, that they are soul, is ignorance, as obscuring right apprehension, it is the eight-fold darkness. In these notions are included those that the body and the rest are soul; since the body and the rest are effects of those eight.'

अहृतिस्नितिभिमानः स च शरीरिकितित्वषयः मिथ्या-

ङ्कनमाच्यते

Nyāya-sūtra-vṛtti, p 198. 'Egoism is the concept of "I"; and, when it has for its object the body and the like, it is called false apprehension.'
there arise, in it, desire for what affords pleasure, and aversion from what produces pain. And, by reason

अध्यासः नाम अनसिस्मेतद्वुद्रिक्लित्वोचाम | तद् यथा
पुत्रभारििशु विकलेषु सकलेषु वास्तववेव विकलः सकलो चेति
बाह्यवर्गीनात्मन्यथ्यस्य | तथा देहवर्गः स्युलोऽह इशोऽह
गोरोऽह तिष्ठामि मल्लामि लक्ष्यादि च | तथेन्द्रियधर्मान्
मूकः कीचो विचरः कायोस्योऽहमिति | तथास्तः करणधर्मान्
कामसंकुल्यविचिनितसाध्यवसायदीन | नाञ्च। नाञ्च।

Sankara Acharya on the Brahma-sūtra: *Bibliotheca Indica*, No. 64, pp. 2-1.

'Misconception, we have said, is the notion that a thing is what it is not. It is when a man, accordingly as his sons, his wife, etc., are in evil case, or in good, by thinking "I am in evil case", or "I am in good case", imputes properties of things external to himself, to his own soul. Thus, he imputes to his soul properties of the body, when he thinks "I am stout", "I am spare", "I am fair", "I stand", "I go", "I leap". In like manner he imputes to his soul properties of the senses, when he thinks "I am dumb", "I am impotent", "I am deaf", "I am one-eyed", "I am blind". And he imputes to his soul properties of the internal organ, such as desire, resolve, dubiety, and certitude.*

But the Vedānta goes beyond anything hitherto adduced, in its view of misapprehension. Witness the next extract, which gives particulars surplus to those in Sankara Achārya. It is from the *Vedānta-sūtra*, p. 15, Calcutta edition of 1829.
of desire and aversion, it engages in various good and evil works, from which accrue to it demerit and merit.

Prābhākara and the Tāṭhāgata argue that ignorance is soul, on the ground of the scripture: “The other, the inner soul consisting of bliss”, and so forth; and because we observe intellect and the rest to merge in ignorance and because of the notions, “I am ignorant”, “I possess consciousness”, etc. As for the Bhāṣya, he asserts that ignorance-enveloped intelligence is soul, since there is the scripture: “The soul consists of solid knowledge alone, and is bliss itself”, and so on, and because, in deep sleep, there are both the light of knowledge and the darkness of ignorance, and because of the notions “Myself I know not”, etc. Another Bandhū, one additional to several before summoned, holds that humility is the soul, by reason of the scripture: “In the beginning this was a mere nonentity”, and so forth; and because, in deep sleep, there is the negation of everything; and because, in a man who has waked, of the consciousness which has for its object the memory of his non-existence, the memory: “In deep sleep I was not”.

This is not the place to detail minutely the import of ajñāna, ignorance, as used in the last extract. A full treatment of the subject will be seen in the third Section.

Among the ignorances, the causes of bondage, is, according to the Sāṅkhya, the soul’s identifying itself with nature, and, according to the Vedānta, its identifying itself with ignorance, etc., etc., as already noted. But who is ever conscious of committing a mistake of this sort? In fact, these hindrances to liberation are rarely instanced as samples of misapprehension. What is meant by the soul’s identification of itself with the body, and with intellect, can be understood; for, as stoutness and leanness are properties of the body, so, in the Sāṅkhya and Vedānta, desire, aversion, etc., are properties of the mind. After this explanation, we see at once what is intended by the
Then, to receive requital, it has to pass to Elysium, or to Hell, and repeatedly to be born and to die. Thus it is that ignorance gives rise to bondage.¹

proposition that the notions expressed by 'I desire', 'I am good', etc., evince ignorance, and that, by these notions, a man confounds his soul with his mind, his body, etc. To these more intelligible species of ignorance, as being those generally referred to by Sanskrit writers, the text restricts its attention.

¹ अविच्छेद्य बन्धन ने द्वरणानं च प्रिणोऽक्ष्येश्वराः प्राणात्—

अनात्मन्याभिज्ञानं तम्माद् दुःखं तत्त्वंतमस्

रागद्विशादयो दोषा: सभ स्वातिकाविन्दनाः: ||

कार्ये बस्य मवेद्द दोष: पूण्यापूण्यमिनी श्रुति: ||

तद्दीयाद्व सर्वे मवेद्दहसमव: ||

इति || Sāṅkhya-gravachana-bhāṣya, p. 39. 'The series of media through which non-discrimination produces bondage is thus brought together and set forth in the śvaravīti: "The conception that what is not soul is soul is first; thence come misery, and the other, happiness. All the defects consequential thereon—desire, aversion, etc. are caused, ultimately, by misapprehension. The effect of that assemblage, desire, etc. is defect, i.e. merit and demerit, says the Veda. From this defect is the rise of all the bodies of all."

For the Naiyāyika view of the succession here summed up, see the second of Gotama's aphorisms, at the foot of p. 9. supra. Misapprehension, as will be noticed, is the root of all ill. From it arises defect, namely, desire, aversion, and the rest. Thence springs activity; thence, birth; and, from it, misery, which is bondage. By activity is meant good and evil acts.

Thus the commentator: प्रत्येकायमेवभिधिक्रयः || Nyāya-
The soul’s identifying itself with the body and so forth is the radical ignorance which involves the soul

sātra-vṛtti, p. 8. ‘Of activity, that is to say, for virtue and for vice.

In the aphorism with which we are concerned the absence of ‘happiness’ and ‘misery’ may have been remarked between ‘false apprehension’ and ‘defect’. They are to be supplied from without; for, as will be manifest from other passages bearing on the subject, defect results immediately from happiness or misery. Nor let the reader be surprised to find misery again at the end of the group The reason is this. In the Hindu Systems, happiness and misery produce defects; these, activity, and this, birth. Then birth anew gives rise to happiness and misery; and so on, in a ceaseless round. And thus it has been from eternity. It was not for Gotama’s purpose, which is to show the origin of misery, to mention happiness with it. The repeating reproduction just spoken of is the topic of the ensuing extract: आधी मुच्छ मानपाल्म् स्मारकाराजयो-नुकुं दुपक्त्यारस्त: काल्तिदिविशापैल्ल्द्वोधस्तत: सृवत: ततो रागद्रेप्ये तयोश्च प्राप्तिस्तत्तथ: पुनः स्वमिनिः। Pātanjala-

bhāṣya-vārttika, MS. fol. 67, verse. ‘First, by experience of happiness and misery, is generated a fund of impressions, undeveloped impressions. Then, owing to special cause, such is time, follows then development; next is memory of the happiness and misery previously experienced, afterwards desire and aversion; subsequently is activity; then, again, misery and happiness.’

आयमचेन हि शरोपादिशु द्यन्य स्वतोयु रुयति कोपनी-ये भु कुप्सिः। Nyāya-sātra-vṛtti, p. 198. ‘By mistaking his body, etc., for his soul, a man takes delight in things delightful, and is vexed by things vexatious.’

That happiness and misery are held, in the Nyāya, to be intercalated between false apprehension and defect, comes out
in bondage. There are, however, several other species of ignorance, proceeding from this; and they all have
from the above. For, where there are delight and vexation, we must presuppose happiness and misery, and antecedent to
these is false apprehension.

From the following passages of Śankara it appears that, unless a man identifies himself, misapprehendingly with
his body, etc., all action is impracticable, and of course the
consequences thereof. Commentary on the ‘Bivamarsūtra’, Bibliotheca Indica, No. 64, p. 17. ‘Since he who has not
the conceit, regarding his body, senses, etc. of “I” or “mine”
cannot be a peripient, the instruments of knowledge, the senses,
etc. cannot operate for him.’ Again: न वचनम् इत्यादि प्राप्ति-
परिहर्सच्चाकारणात्माप्रविष्टमात्रां कर्मभोजोध्वसवाभिमानाभरणं तदृसः पितृविस्वाभिमानानाभरणं नापनीयते।
यथावत् तदनापनीयते तताद्वयं कर्मफलश्रृङ्खला दिस्माभिविध, दोषप्रयुक्त: शाश्वतिविशिष्टप्रतिष्ठानमिवर्णित: प्रावत्तमानो मनोविकायायि इत्यादित्यागं
साधनान्यथार्थसत्कारं कर्मणुपचिनोति बाहुर्येन श्लाबधविको
- दोषविवेकस्वाभास्तत: तत्: स्यावरान्तायोगित:। कदाचित्त शाश्वतिन्तत्संकारविकल्यस्तम्। ततो मनाकथितिश्रवसाधनं बाहुर्येन
नोपचिनोति धर्मोयम्। तद् द्विविं ज्ञानपूर्वकं केवलं च।
तत् केवलं पितृलोकादिप्राप्तिफलम्। ज्ञानपूर्वकं देवलोकादिप्राप्तिफलम्। तथा च शाश्वम्। आलम्याजो श्रेयान्
the same effect. Such, for instance, is the setting store

न देवयाजीयादि। स्मलिष्ठ द्विविध कर्म वेदिकामियादि।
साम्ये च धर्माधर्ममिथोपनृपुलप्रानि। एवं ब्रह्माया स्वाकरा-
न्ता सामाविकाविविहारिदीपवतो धर्मधर्मसाधनकृतसंसारगति।

Śankara Āchārya’s Commentary on the Brhad Āraṇyaka
ingnorance respecting the soul, ignorance characterized by the
egoistic notion that the soul is a door and an experiencer, and
engendering the wish to secure what is desirable to it, and to
obliterate what is undesirable, is not eliminated by right apprehen-
sion—the reverse of ignorance—of the nature of the soul, one with
Brahmā. And, so long as that ignorance is not eliminated, this
one, namely, a man, being actuated by natural defects (namely,
desire, aversion, etc., consequences of works) goes on, infringing
the law’s injunctions and prohibitions, and, by mind, speech, and
person, accumulates, in multiplicity, works, known as sins, sources
of seen and unseen evils. For the natural defects are generally
preponderant. Thence comes degradation as far as things immo-
vable. But sometimes the impressions produced by holy wri are
preponderant. Then, by the mind and the rest, he plenteously
amasses virtue, as it is called, which is the source of benefit. This
virtue is of two kinds; accompanied by knowledge, and unaccomp-
panied. The latter has for its fruit the attainment of the Abode
of Progenitors, and the like. The former has for its fruit the
attainment of the Abode of the gods, as one limit, and the Abode
of Brahmā, as the other. And thus says the scripture: “The
worshipper of the Supreme spirit is to be preferred, not the
worshipper of the gods”, etc. The Smriti also declares: “Works
ordained by the Veda are of two kinds”, etc. Further, when
virtue and sin equilibrate, one inherits humanity. Thus is the
course of transmigration—beginning with Brahmā, and ending
with things fixed, as trees, and occasioned by virtue and sin—with
him who has the defects of natural nascience and such like.’

The ‘worshipper of the Supreme spirit’ is he who, while
engaged in constant ritual observances, beholds Brahmā in all.
So says Ānanda Giri. By the ‘worshipper of the gods’ is
by the things of this world, of Elysium, and of other future abodes.¹

meant one who adores them under the promptings of a hope of requital.

In the second sentence, *karma-pālita* has been translated, with some hesitation, *consequences of works*, desire and aversion being so designated. If this seems to contradict the statement that desire and aversion instigate to works, which then, are themselves consequences, the difficulty is solved by the remarks on the second of Gotama's aphorisms, in the note at p. 11. The eternal revolution of causes and effects is here taken for granted.

It transpires, from this extract, that the egoistic concept that the soul energizes, enjoys, and suffers, is the foundation of desire, aversion, virtue, sin, exaltation and degradation of birth, transmigration, and, in fine, of all evil. It has, further, been shown, in the extract from Śankara Vīchārya, at p. 10, footnote, that the egoistic notion under consideration consists in identifying the soul with the mind, the body, etc.

¹ सकुल्लप: समीचीनत्वेन भावनं तथिश्वरक्ति छवाद्यः

दोषश्य रागादेनिमिन्सुन्दरोयमितिजाननं रघुति। Nyāya-
sūtra-vr̥tti, pp. 198-9. "High esteem", the supposition of excellence. Colour and other things, when made objects thereof, are causes of defect, namely, of desire, etc.; as where, taking a woman to be beautiful, one is pleased with her.

परिष्कारबद्रिदिनुरुक्षनसंज्ञा सा हेया।...अनुरंजन-

संज्ञा यथा।

खेल्लुक्ष्णनयनार परिणविभवाधरा पूर्वश्वरोपी।

कमलमुकुलस्तनोय पूर्णानुमयो मुखय में भविता॥

इति।  Ibid. p. 199. "‘The notion of embellishment’, the consciousness of anything being a source of delight, should be
Again, in the Systems, good works, no less than evil works, contribute to bondage. The fruit of good works is happiness: and yet they are called a cause of bondage, inasmuch as they preclude the soul from being liberated. For the authors of the Systems regard emancipation as being the release of the soul from the body, the mind, cognition, desire, etc. But good works, for the enjoyment of their desert, compel the relinquished. The consciousness of anything being a source of delight is thus exemplified: “This maid, with eyes restless as wagtail, with a lower lip like a ripe cherry, wide-hipped, with breasts resembling an opening lotus, and whose face rivals the full moon, will serve to give me solace.”

\[ विषयेऽश्चित्मेति स्कुलायति तद्ग्नानः \]
\[ संयोगादिप्नान कामः कामान पुंसः प्रवर्तनम् \]

\[ स्कुल्प्यं वर्जयेन तस्मान सर्वान्तर्यथः कारणम् \]

\[ इति \] Viveka-chūḍāmana, attributed to Śankara Vaiśnava; MS.

place not noted. “The mind, betaking itself to objects, conceives esteem for their qualities. From this esteem of them as good comes desire for them. From this desire is man’s engaging in action. Let one, therefore, eschew esteem, the origin of all evil.”

Virtuous actions, as well as sinful, are said, below, to be a cause, to the soul and also to the intellect, of bondage.

ततोपि च कारणोत्तेदाद् धर्मीर्यम्यानि कर्मानि
बुद्धिपुष्पयोर्भकारणानि क्षयस्यद्यद्यावनामानि कर्तिति\

Pātanīla-bhāṣya-vṛtti, MS. fol. 2, verso “And on this”, by extirpation of the cause, namely, ignorance, abstraction of thought (yoga) loosens the bonds, i.e. virtuous and sinful actions—
soul, until their fruition is consummated, to abide in the body of a god, a man, or some other superior being, for of works, good or evil, it is impossible for they bind intellect and soul—in other words, incapacitates them for bringing forth desert.'

For the Naiyāyika view, see the second of Gotama’s aphorisms, lately remarked on. The root of misery is, there, activity; the originator, as the commentator has explained, of virtue and vice. Hence, in the Nyāya also, good and bad works alike generate misery, and by consequence bondage.

That the same opinion is held by the Vedānta is manifest from Śankara Āchārya’s commentary on the Brihād Aranyaka 1.5.18. See the citation at p. 17 supra, especially its concluding sentence.

1. तद्वृक्तं यात्रवर्क्येन ।
सर्वध्यातिनं परियव्ययं मे क्रान्तकर्मं समाभ्रेयेन ।
सर्वधयाति: सदेशप: श्यो: पुरनावृत्तिकारकः ॥

इति | Pātanjala-bhāṣya-vārttika, MS. fol. 158, recto.

'It has been said by Yājnavalkya, 'Putting aside all other good works, let a man apply himself to the one good work which leads to emancipation; to wit, the attainment of right apprehension; for all other works are attended by defects, and induce renewal of mundane existence.'

That good works, in the Nyāya, are a hindrance to emancipation is evident from the Nyāya-sūtra-vṛtti. The sixty-first aphorism of the fourth book of the Nyāya-sūtra implies that a man who has acquired right apprehension may, on becoming an ascetic, relinquish the maintenance of a sacramental hearth, and it is thus intimated that such maintenance can then no longer act as a bar to his being liberated. Relatively to this, an objection is raised, in the preface to the sixty-second aphorism:

-नन्यप्रियोलस्यांप्रतिबिक्षुकवेदपि तत्कर्त्त्वं प्रवासपवर्गप्रति
"Though the maintenance of a sacrificial hearth is not itself a hindrance to emancipation, yet its fruit, Elysium, must be so." To this it is replied, that the ordinary requital of this meritorious act does not take effect in the case of the rightly apprehending ascetic. For his are not the plenary attributes of one who maintains a sacrificial hearth; those attributes not being rendered complete until after his death, at his moksham. A further difficulty is then raised and solved.

"अग्निहोत्रकल्याणावेष्पि योनिश्चरोगद्राक्षानांधिः
हिंसाकल्यानं प्रतिवन्धकलं स्थानं। अतो हृदन्तरसचवया
चकार उपन्यस्तस्थात्र प्रार्थनातीतिरिक्तकर्मणां श्रावादेव कः
इन्द्रियः। "Though the requital of the maintenance of a sacrificial hearth is not for that ascetic, nevertheless, there must be a hindrance to his emancipation, in the fruits of the yajña sacrihce, ablution in the Ganges, etc., good works, and in the fruits of injury to animals, sin, which he may have done. Therefore, it is said, in reply, to add another reason, an "and" is exhibited in the aphorism; and thus the position is, that mere right apprehension obliterates all works but those that have begun to fructify.'

Works of this class will be explained a little further on.

How far the force of works, virtuous and various, extends, is propounded in the ensuing passage.

"नन्वें शर्य्यारक्षिणाः क्रयं
पुनर्जन्मादिद्वालस्त्यात् स्त्रावीदिशीर्ये क्रमायं
न्तः निविदिशीर्ये अद्वियम्यादानं
समाप्तीतिनिविदिशीर्ये अद्वियम्यादानं
ब्रह्मान्यविदियारक्षिणाम्। Patanjala-bhāṣya-vārttika,"
to evade the fruit.¹ Nor is the happiness rewarded by such works a thing pre-eminently desirable. Transitory,² and conjoined with divers inconveniences, itself is misery.³ To explain this: to go to Elysium, heard that works which con-sign to Elysium or to Hell, ensure until one is born a Brahmân, a tree, or as the case may be.

¹ Works of whatever character entail inevitable consequences. The following half-stanza to this effect is on the lips of every pandit; but its author-ship has not been discovered.

² कर्मसाध्याय चाउनियाचे श्रुति: तद यथेऽकर्मचितो

³ तदपि पूर्वसूतोकं सुखमपि दुःखमिश्रितमित्यतो दु:ख-कोटी मुखद:खविवचका निद्रिपन्त इत्यः: त् सृष्टिः हि ताबद्र

Sāṅkhya-pravacana-bhāṣīya, p. 62. 'That whatever is obtainable by works is non-eternal there is the scripture: "As perishes the world here, gained by works, just so perishes the world to come, gained by virtue."

Tattva-kauumudi, p. 4. 'The perishableness of Elysium, etc., is inferred from their being originated entities.'

For, agreeably to a maxim of all the Systems, every originated entity is non-eternal. Texts from the Nyāya and the Vedānta may, therefore, here be dispensed with.
and to be born of a reputable stock, and to amass wealth, and the like, are the consequences of good works. But these consequences terminate as soon as the fund of merit which earned them is exhausted; and the very privation of them brings sorrow, which is misery. So long as the soul misapprehends, desire and aversion constantly affect it, the doing good and evil are unavoidable to it, and it has no escape from the gyration of births and deaths. Nor can any one forbear virtue, a cause of thralldom, and so escape thralldom, for, if while still in misapprehension

दःखये निक्षितमिति सुम्भोगोपिद्रःखमोग एव | Ibid. p. 232. 'Since happiness is thrown to the side of misery, to taste of that is really to taste of this.'

खर्गीदिस्तुखयादिरेताशङ्कानेन दुःकस्मवधिविलमव्याहत्वेव |

From the Dinakari, the MS. not at hand to refer to. 'That also the happiness of Elysium and the like, from being known for perishable, is connected with misery, is of course undisputed.'

¹ पृष्ठपत्रदन्मित्रो हि इद्यापूर्तकारी कामोपहतमना वध्यते |

इति | Tatwa-kaumudi, p. 14. 'One ignorant of the nature of the soul, performing meritorious observances, and having his mind corrupted by desire, thereby incurs bondage.'

In the paragraph to which this note appertains, it has been stated, generally, that good works are a cause of bondage. A few particulars may possess interest to one who would go somewhat further into this topic. Good works may be distinguished, primarily, into incumbent and voluntary. The incumbent may, again, be divided into constant and occasional. The voluntary are acts of supererogation, and may be done from the motive of obtaining a determinate reward.
a man, otherwise than after prescribed rules, relinquishes incumbent good works, constant and occasional, by

Incumbent good works, some Hindus hold, do not aim except to atone for past transgressions, and to purify the intellect; they thus conduce to the acquisition of right knowledge. Elevation to Elysium, and the like, are not their retribution; and the passages of sacred writings which enumerate that such results are their retribution are not to be taken, it is contended, according to the letter, but as eulogistic beyond it. These works, agreeably to the view thus taken of them, do not operate for bondage; and yet more or less of stigma cleaves to them; for defecation of the understanding, and ritual ordinances, however helpful towards the acquisition of right knowledge, are not deemed altogether good things. Vijnana Bhikshu, in answer to the question, how virtuous works, done without desire of reward, can bring about misery, since liberation is promised to them, replies: कर्मणि दुःखाद दुःखं भवति | कुतः | साध्यवाचिरिष्यात् | कर्मसाध्यस्य सत्यवृद्धिकारकान्तिस्यापि लिघुणामकः तु:-
खात्मकवादिन्यथः | Sānkhya-pravachana-bhushya, p. 63. 'In works, whether those done with desire of reward, or those done without it, there is misery from misery. Why? Because their rewards do not differ in respect that they are alike effected by works. That is to say, even right apprehension—which, through purification of the intellect, is effected by works—since it consists of the three guṇas, is of the essence of misery. Such is the sense.'

As for the Naiyāyikas, it is laid down, by them, that all varieties of knowledge, or apprehension, come under the head of the twenty-one species of misery, which are to be got rid of; this riddance constituting emancipation. Thus the Dinakari: दुःखानि शरीरं बहिनिर्वाणाय वद्विमया: षड्युद्यय: सुखं दुःखं च चेत्येकविश्वतिकं दुःखम् | 'The body, the six senses,
so doing he commits evil. Such works may be given up only according to the rules of asceticism. And the mind being the sixth, their six kinds of objects, their six kinds of knowledge, happiness, and misery, are the one and twenty miseries.'

From this we are to understand, that, though right apprehension is desirable, it is so as to the means of salvation, not in itself, for, viewed intrinsically, it is to be accounted misery. As the Hindus express themselves, it is like the toil which a man goes through in cooking his dinner.

But, further, even incumbent good works involve the commission of sin, according to Vāchaspāti Misra: अविश्वद्व्र्द्वेदोषविदाधिः पक्षावादाधिष्ठि, Tattva-kaumudi, p 4 'The impurity of sacrifices, the sacrifice of the moon-plant juice, for example, comes from their causing the destruction of beasts, of cereal grains, and the like.' Much more, to the same purport, follows the above.

Again, अते यूक्तमुका पूण्यावापाणामापिन हिंसानामानिन्द्रहृत्यम | Pātanjala-bhāṣya-varṭṭika, MS. fol. 108, recto.

'Therefore it is well said, that even those slayings, in sacrifice, which accompany the sowing of virtue, are sources of evil.' Shortly after this we find a quotation from the 'Moksha-dharma' section of the Mahābhārata:

सर्वाणि भूतानि सुखे समते सर्वाणि दुःखेषु त्योदित्तति ।
तेषा मयोत्यादनाधिस्वेद: कुर्यांत्र न कर्माणि हि जातवेद: ||

'All creatures delight in happiness; all likewise are discomforted by misery. Grieved by the thought of causing fear to them, Jātavedas, one should not engage in works.'

Vijnāna Bhikshu, to bear out the allegation, that incumbent works oblige to sin, elsewhere says: युधिष्ठिरादीनां स्वर्मांदूरिः
yet asceticism is not permitted to all. Thus, it would be improper in a man newly married to a young wife, and who has as yet no offspring; and to a man who

एकादेश ज्ञातिवचारितप्रस्तवायपरिहारणां प्रायश्चित्तश्रवणां च।
Sanükya-pravachanā-bhāṣya, p. 11 'And we have heard that Yudhishtīra and others, though war and such like were, to them, incumbent duties, did penance to expiate the sin of killing their kinsmen and others.' The fighting of the Pāṇḍavas, here called their duty, was with their own relatives.

So much for one theory touching the effect of incumbent good works. Another, and one more accordant with the usual strain of the sacred books, is as follows. In this theory, incumbent good works have all the virtue ascribed to them in the other, and, over and beyond, have for requital what is there denied them. Truth to tell, it is very latitudinarian exegesis that treats as eulogistic the texts where they are said to be rewarded by migration to Elysium. We read, in an unverified quotation in the Suddhanta-muktāvali:

सत्यामुपासते यें तु सत्यं संशिलत्रता: ।
त्रिधुतपासते यानि ब्रह्मलोकमनामयम् ॥

'Men of potent observances, who uninterruptedly transact their worship at the turns of the day, their sins removed, pass to the Abode of Brahmā, where no harm enters.' See the Bibliotheca Indica, vol. ix, p. 134. I have corrected a typographical error.

Worship at the turns of the day, that is morning, noon, and evening, is an incumbent or obligatory duty.

The opinion now before us is that of the author of the Vedaṅgā-
sāra, who says, at p. 2: एतेऽपि नित्यादीना बुद्धिश्चिदि: परं प्रयोजनम् । उपासनानां तु तदेकाः परं प्रयोजनम् ॥

'Of these constant and other works purification of intellect is the principal final cause. But concentration thereof, of intellect, is the principal final cause of devotions.' After citing a couple of passages, the author goes on to declare: नित्यनैन्मतिकयोहपास—
has aged parents to support, etc. But the greatest difficulty is in this, that, though, from having entered upon an ascetic course, a man is dispensed from constant and occasional works, still there are many things which, in his own despite, derive merit to him. Such is contact with the water of the Ganges; the merit communicated by which he reaps, whether he will or not. To free oneself from the fetters of both virtue and vice, right apprehension is the sole remedy.

Things being so, the Systems declare that release from transmigration, and all that it entails, can be achieved only by acquiring right apprehension. And

नृनां चासवान्तरफलं पितृलोकस्यलोकप्राप्तो । 'And the subordinate fruit of constant and occasional works, and of devotions, is the gaining the Abode of Progenitors and the Abode of Brahma.'

Śankara Achārya is of the same mind, as may be seen in the note at p. 17. He there speaks of two sorts of good works, each of which earns some supernal residence. And it appears, from the language of his commentator, that constant good works are therein embraced, for he says that the 'worshipper of the spirit', is one who engages in such works.

In this second theory, then, incumbent good works, no less than voluntary, are a cause of bondage.

'वस्तुति विनाशपीच्छं गणनालवलम्योगादितो धर्मादिच्छम-वानः।

Nyāya-sūtra-śṛtti, p. 8. 'In fact, even independently of volition, virtue and sin may be produced by touching, for instance, the water of the Ganges.'

2 The twenty-third aphorism of the Sānkhya-pravacana, Book III, is झानान मुक्ति:। 'From right apprehension is emancipation.'
right apprehension consists in the recognition, by the soul, of itself as distinct from the mind, the senses; the body, and all else.\(^1\) This is the principal kind

For the Nyāya, see the first aphorism of the Nyāya sūtra.

The Vedānta-paribhāṣā has, at p. 48: स च ज्ञानकार्यः।

‘And that liberation is to be obtained by right apprehension alone.’ The word ‘liberation’ is resumed from the previous context.

\(^1\)परमार्थततु सत्यपुरुषार्थवायनदेवाश्वानानविक्रियादिदृष्ट्र—

द्वारा कैवल्यमित्यः। Pātanjala-bhāṣya-vārttiḥ, MS. fol. 158, verso, ‘But, in reality, solely from the knowledge of the soul’s alterity from the intellect, through the removal of ignorance, and other evident mediu, there is isolation, or emancipation. Such is the sense.’

In the Sāṇkhya, equally does bondage result from identifying the soul with mind, and from identifying it with nature. Prior to liberation, the soul must be distinguished from nature, the radical material principle, as well as from mind. This is implied in the excerpt from the Sāṇkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya at p. 6, where it is said that discrimination of soul from nature is the means of attaining the aim of the soul, which is there a technicality equivalent to liberation. At p. 41 of the work just referred to we further read: यच् च बृद्धिपुरुषस्वावेकशेव मोक्ष इत्यिप

कविदच्छते तब स्थूलसूक्षमबुद्धिप्रहणात प्रक्तिरिप प्रहणम्।

‘And, as for that also which is said in some places, that emancipation comes from the discrimination of the soul from intellect alone; gross intellect and subtle being there comprehended, nature is comprehended in the term intellect.’

तथा च योगसूत्रं योगांशानुशास्त्राध्ययिये ज्ञानदीतिति—

विवेकश्च तदर्थ्य:। Tardhikṣā योगां यमनियमादिनां अनुभा—

नाच चित्रमाधुर्यश्रव्याधिकृतस्य क्षये सति ज्ञानस्य दीपितः
of right apprehension: but several other kinds are also necessary, as, for instance, the disesteeming the things

प्रकृति: । स च विवेकवायातिपर्यन्ते जायते । सा च सत्व-
पुरुषान्यतासाक्षात्कारोस्मन्ते तु देहादिभिमिनासाक्षात्कार: ।
Nyāya-sūtra-vṛtti, p. 216, 'And so the Yoga-sūtra: "When, by attending to the auxiliaries to coercion of thought mental
impurities are done away, there is the forthshining of knowledge until discriminative cognition supervenes." And the meaning
of this is, that, when, by attention to the auxiliaries to coercion of thought, viz., subjugation, normal piety, etc., impurity of
mind, in the form of nescience and the rest, is done away, the
shining forth, or a high degree, of knowledge ensues: and thus
subsists until one obtains discriminative cognition. And this is
immediate apprehension of the difference between the Sāṅkhya's
intellect and soul, but, in our system, it is immediate appre-
hension of the soul as distinct from the body and so forth.'
The aphorism of the Yoga which is introduced is the twenty-
sixth of the second book.

तथा च श्रवणमननिदिध्यासनाति तत्तत्त्वान्यजनकानीत्यतः
भवति । अति स्रुतितः: क्लयायमश्रवणस्य मननेद्विधिकारः । मननं
वास्तव ितरभिमिनासानभुमाम् । तच् च भेदप्रतियोगोतसे-
श्रावसाध्यम् । तथा चेतार एव के तद्धर्ष पदार्थिनिद्रपमाम् ।

Jagadīśa Tarkalankāra Bhaṭṭāchārya's Tarkārya, a Naiyāyika
treatise, MS. ed init. 'And thus it is expressed, that hearing
about spirit from sacred books, and consideration and meditation
thereon, are originative of a knowledge of the true nature of the
soul. One who has heard about soul from scripture is qualified
for consideration; which consists in inferring that soul is differ-
ent from other things. And this deduction depends on acquaint-
ance with those other things from which it, soul, differs. Thus
then, the categories are described in order to show what those
other things are.'
of this world and of the next, and so on. To gain right apprehension, one must study the Śāstras; and to this study clearness of intellect and heart is indispensable. To this end good works are recommended, such as sacrifice, alms, pilgrimage, repetition of sacred words, austerities, and the like; but to be performed without desire of Elysium and other lower

Hence it is evident, that, where the first aphorism of the Nyāya makes liberation to result from a knowledge of the truth regarding sixteen things enumerated, we are to understand, that the consequence follows from one's being enabled, by that knowledge, to discriminate soul from what is not soul.

Śaṅkara Āchārya, after dilating on the topic of mistaking soul for other things, and other things for soul which is called misapprehension, or ignorance, says: तद्विवेकेन च बल्लक्षणाया वघारण विद्यामाहुः: | Bibliotheca Indica, No. 64, p. 16. 'And the ascertainment of the nature of reality, through discrimination of those, soul and not soul, they call true science.'

¹ते भपादयो हैलेन भावनीया: प्रथम ततः: शरीरत्म विवेकः: |

Nyāya-sūtra-vṛitti, p. 199. 'Those things, colour and the rest, should first be meditated on as deserving to be rejected: subsequently is discrimination of soul from body.' Shortly after this we read: दोषदर्शनमस्मिन्मंश्यां सा भावनोयति! 'Recognition as ill is intuition of defects; and it is to be practised.' The following couplet is subjoined, by the author, as a sample of the sort of thoughts to be called up, by an aspirant after emancipation, when his eyes fall on a woman:—

चर्मिनिर्विवालोल्यां मात्रास्मृतमपूर्विता।
अर्थां रज्यति यो मूढः पिशाचः कस्तत्तोत्तिधिकः॥
rewards. Therefrom comes the clearness just spoken of, which is of the greatest assistance towards the attainment of right apprehension.\(^1\) This apprehension the enquirer obtains from the Śāstras, and from the

\[\text{‘As for this bag of hide, charged with flesh, blood, and feculence, who is a greater ghoul than the fool that fancies her?’}\]

Further, it is prescribed, खशरीरादारवध्यशुभमञ्जेव भावनीया।

\[\text{‘Also as concerns one’s own body and the like should recognition as ill be put in practice.’}\]

The feelings of an ignorant man towards his enemy are exemplified as follows:

मां दृष्टकृत दुराचार इष्ठादिपु यथेष्टतः।
कण्ठपीटं कुठारेण छिल्लास्य स्या सुखी कदः॥

\[\text{‘This wretch hates me most cordially for all my felicities. When shall I have the gratification of cutting his throat with a hatchet?’}\]

On the other hand, a right-minded person is said to reflect on his enemy after this fashion:—

मांसासुस्कीकसमयो देह: किं नेशप्राध्यन्ति।
एतमपादपर: कन्ती कर्तनोय: कथं मया॥

\[\text{‘What offence to me does his body, made up of flesh, blood, and bones? The real doer of the offence, that is, the offender’s soul, which is other than this body, how can I injure that?’}\]

A strange way this may seem of reasoning oneself out of an intention to be revenged. But an endeavour must be made to dismiss the sentiment of vindictiveness as well—say the Hindus—and also all affections whether of aversion or of desire, before a man is in a condition to be liberated.

\(^1\) See, for the Sānkhya, the extract from the Sānkhya-pravachana-bhāṣhya at p. 17.

For the Nyāya, see the passage of the Nyāya-sūtra-ryittī cited at p. 19. The subjugation and normal piety, spoken of at that
tuition of preceptors. And then, for some time, he ponders and reflects on it, and so obtains immediate cognition of his own soul.\(^1\) On his mastering this place, are just before elucidated in these words: यमानाह योगमात्र अविरिसास्यात्यश्चाचित्यापरिश्रवाय यमाः । नियमानाह शौच-सन्तोषतपः साध्यायेश्वरप्रणाणानि नियमा । साध्यायः साम-मितमत्त्रिपः । तिष्ठताचारणतत्तदाश्रमविनिताचरणं यमनि-यमाः इत्यये।

'The Yoga-sūtra thus specifies acts of subjugation:

"Not killing, truthfulness, not stealing, chastity, and self-denial, are acts of subjugation." Thus it specifies normal piety: 'Purification, serenity, austerity, inaudible repetition and devotion to God, are normal piety.' "Inaudible repetition" is recitation of the holy text. Others aver that the forbidding what is forbidden is yama, and that the doing what is prescribed to each several religious stage is niyama.'

A Brāhmaṇa's life is divided, with reference to religion, into four stages.

असिन्द जन्मनि जन्मान्तरे वा काम्यनिपिद्वर्जनपुरःसर नियमनिमित्तिक्षाय विद्योगासनानुसारनेन नित्तिनितिकिलकल्लक्ष्मतया नितान्तिनिर्मेतखान्त: । Vedānta-sūra, pp. 1 and 2. 'Since a man, by abstaining, in this birth, or in a former birth, from things done with desire of reward and things forbidden, and by engaging in constant and occasional works, in penance, and in devotion, is thereby purged of all sin, has his mind thoroughly cleansed,' etc.

This is only a member of a long sentence, not necessary to be given in its entirety.

\(^1\) अतावपि विवेकेकपि । । । श्रवणमनवनिदिया-सन्न्यासये कारणेः। Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāshya, p. 215.
cognition, though desire and aversion do not on that account altogether take their departure, yet their strength is materially abated; for, however perfect his right apprehension becomes, nevertheless, since he is still connected, through the body, with external objects, it follows, that some traces of desire and aversion manifest themselves so long as the soul tenants the body. ¹ When the soul leaves it, those affections disappear entirely. Further, so long as the man of right apprehension has a body, he does more or less of good and evil. Only these do not ripen, in him, into

¹"Here also," i.e. as regards discrimination also, hearing about soul from scripture and consideration and meditation heron, are its cause." Also: उत्कुष्पप्रकारतत्त्वविपयज्ञानम्यासांदर्शनः-नत्त्वदोषकालविविधानं सत्कुषुवेशान्यतासाध्याकारिन्यानुप-वते | Tattva Kaumudi, p. 55. 'By cultivating, in the manner laid down, an acquaintance with the principles—by pursuing it with due heed, continuously, and protractedly—knowledge, or right apprehension, is generated, immediately perceptive of the difference between intellect and soul.'

For the Nyāya, see the Tarhāmrīta, cited at p. 20.

प्रवृत्त सत्कुषुवेशान्यतासाध्याकारिन्यानुपवत्ते। वेदृंतासरा, p. 23. 'Till he attains to immediate cognition, thus described, of that Intelligence which is his own very essence, there being need of the practice of hearing holy writ, consideration, meditation, and coercion of thought,' etc. etc.

¹यथपि ज्ञानिनोदपि श्रगदयसिद्धिन्ति तथाप्युक्ततरागाय-भावे तत्त्वयम् | Nyāya-sūtra-vṛitti, p. 8. 'It is meant, that
merit and demerit; and, consequently, they do not entail on him the necessity of visiting Elysium, or Hell, and of being born again. And right apprehension has this efficacy, that all good and evil fructescent works excepted—which the soul did previously to acquiring it, is thereby obliterated. Works are of three descriptions, technically designated as accumulated, current, and fructescent. Accumulated works are such, among those done in former lives, as have not yet borne fruit: by the acquisition of right apprehension, these are burnt, or rendered ineffectual. Current works are those which are done in the present life: these have no effect on the possessor of right apprehension. Fructescent works are such as were done in former lives, and gave origin to the body now though even in the possessor of right apprehension desire, etc., continue, yet they are not excessive.'

No manuscript is accessible to the writer, by which to verify the annexed couplet. It is said to be from the Jīvan mukti-vireka, a Vedānta work by Mādhava Āchārya:--

उत्तध्याना रागाधा विवेकज्ञानविविधिना ।
	तदा तदैव ददान्ते कुतल्लेषां प्ररोहणम् ॥

'Desire and so forth, as fast as they arise, are at once consumed by the fire of discriminative knowledge. How, then, can they grow?'

1 Prārabhāda, the word thus rendered, is defined 'which has begun to bear fruit.' No single English term, in past or present use, being found that conveys this idea, I have taken the liberty of coining one.

'Accumulated' and 'current' translate, respectively, sanchita and kriyamāna. A very rare substitute for the latter is āgamin, 'eventual'. I have doubts about it. See my edition of the Tattva-bodha, p. 8.
inhabited, determining its duration, and everything appertaining to the present state of existence. These three sorts of works resemble three kinds of seed-grain. The seed-grain of works which a man, like a husbandman, has stored in his garner, is, accumulated; and right apprehension burns it. Again, the seed-grain of works which he is sowing in this life is 'current'; and it is scorched by right apprehension, so that it brings forth no fruit. Once more, the seed-grain which he sowed in a former birth, and which has already begun to bear, is known as 'fructescent'. Now, these fructescent works cannot be made void by right apprehension. It is to receive the requital

'ज्ञानस्य हि व्यापारद्वयं केशाध्यहेत्तुलेन कर्मानुपादः प्राचेतकर्मणं दाहक्ष्य न तु कर्मनाशः प्रार्थकर्मणोऽग्नि नाशप्रत्यक्षानां।

Pātanjala-bhāṣya-rāttika, MS. fol. 62. recto. 'For the function of right apprehension is two-fold, hindrance to the production of works causative of happiness and misery, called affliction, and the combustion of past, i.e. accumulated, works; but its function is not destruction of works: for, if it were so, fructescent works would perish with the rest.'

Frequently, as in several instances in the foregoing passage, the term karman, literally, 'works', is unquestionably put for the merit or demerit accruing from them.

Refer, for the Nyāya, to the second citation in the note at p. 15.

उत्तरादित्तकार्थ्यन्यस्यतिरिक्तानां सचिन्तकर्मणांभें ज्ञानविना-

Vedānta-paribhāṣa, p. 52. 'Those accumulated works alone which are distinct from such as have produced their effects, i.e. distinct from fructescent works, are understood to be effaceable by right apprehension.'

That coercion of mind in which all thoughts are suppressed is, Vijnāna Bhikshu holds, of greater efficacy than right apprehension
of them that the man of right apprehension has to remain in the body, and to experience divers joys and griefs.  

But, this experience ended, he quits the body, and is absolved from the recurrence of birth: even, in that it, and it alone, is able to neutralize the effect of works that have begun to bear fruit. The words are: 

\[Patanjala-bhashya-varttika, MS. fol. 3, verso.\]

By mental coercion to the suppressing of every thought, all germs being consumed, even fructescent works are got over. Thus, there is a superiority, in such coercion, over right apprehension.

\[Sankhya-pravachana-bhashya, p. 158.\] Thys though there is no production of works after right apprehension, he that is liberated and is still living continues to hold a body, which is swayed by the impulse of fructescent works. This is the sense. It is also said: 

\[Patanjala-bhashya-varttika, MS. fol. 76, recto.\] The experience of happiness and misery of him who lives on after emancipation is just a plausible fallacy.

\[Sankhya-sara, MS., fol. 1.\]
for works are no more his; and birth is only for the

verse. 'When there is discriminative immediate cognition
of soul from what is not soul; and hence removal of all conceit
of agency and the like, and hence surescease of the production
of the effects of that conceit, viz., desire, aversion, virtue, vice,
and the like, and when past works are burnt, that is to say,
when their auxiliaries, existence, desire, and so on are extirpated,
and therefore cannot begin to bear fruit, and when fruitless
works have been reaped in experience; birth no longer awaiting
there is liberation, entire cessation of threefold misery. Such
is the proclamation by drum of the Veda and Simritis.'

श्रुयोपदिष्ट्योगाविविधा निदिष्यास्ये क्षते तदन्ततत देहादिदे-
ि.लक्षणात्मसाक्षाकारे सति देहादात्मसमानत्सपिश्याज्ञान-
नाशी सति दोषभावान प्रकृत्यावै धमोङ्ध्मयोरस्वाभाब अस्मात-
भावे पूर्वस्याध्यायोरनुभवन नामेचममुःक्षवस्तुक्षणो मोक्षे
जायते। Tarka-dipika, MS. fol. 30, verso. 'When meditation
has been performed according to the rules for coercion of thought
enjoined by the Veda; and when there has resulted immediate
cognition of the soul as distinct from the body and so forth.
and when abolition has ensued of the erroneous apprehension,
the conceit, that I am body and the like; defects no longer
having place; nor, thereafter, activity; nor, then, virtue and
vice; nor, then, birth; past virtue and vice being cancelled by
right apprehension, i.e., by the immediate cognition aforesaid:
emancipation is reached, which is the annulment of the last
subsisting misery.'

The man who has secured emancipation and is still in life,
and his plenitude of emancipation after parting from the body,
are described, by Vedanta writers, in the next two passages.

जीतन्तुत्तो नाम स्वस्वद्यागण्डशुद्ध्रब्रह्मानन्ततद्वाचवाधनवद्वाराः
स्वस्वद्यागण्डग्राणि साधुस्तुते सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे
सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे
सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे
सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे
सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे
सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे सत्याञ्चाक्षे

COMMON DOGMAS 45
purpose of receiving the recompense of past works. Thus, after death, the man of right apprehension, being divested of not only his body, but likewise of

विपर्ययादीनासिपि वाचित्वद्रादिलवशर्षितो ब्रह्मनित्रः ।

Vedānta-sūtra, p. 27. 'The “liberated, but still living,” is he who—by knowledge of pure Brahma, who is his own essence and indivisible, through removal of ignorance concerning him, Brahma, having obtained immediate cognition of Brahma, who is himself and indivisible; whence is riddance of ignorance, and of its effect, which are accumulated works, doubt, misconception, etc.—set free from all fetters, abides in Brahma, conscious of being identical therewith.' अर्घ देह्यात्मामात्माप्रतीक्षानिन्दोषक-रूपार्थिनि सूक्ष्मा:खलक्षणायारथवध्वलायनुमत्वत्वर-णामासादीनासिमास्कः पद्ध तदमने प्रष्यानन्दन-प्रत्येकायि प्राणे हीने सत्यात्तकारायसंस्काराणामिपि विनाशाति परमक्षेत्र-मानन्देकसमस्मित्रिभेदभ्रतिमार्हितमन्धन्दं ब्रह्मायात्मितः ।

Ibid., p. 28. 'This one, who is liberated, but is still living, experiencing, merely for the sustentation of his body, happiness and misery, which are brought to him by his own will, or without it, by the will of others, and which are the effects of fructescent works; he being the illuminator of the reflexion of his own soul in his internal organ, etc.; when it, the requital of fructescent works, comes to an end, and his vital breath is merged in the supreme Brahma, one with inward joy; ignorance and its germinal effects being destroyed,—remains Brahma, who is absolute isolation, unadulterate bliss, pure of all notion of alterity, individual.'

1 तदमावश्यासिपपर्के । तथ्य शरीरदेशेवाम: तदरमस्मककुम्भः

न्यायिकेत्रसिद्धिति भाव: । Nyāya-sūtra-vṛtti, p. 215. 'And in
his mind, and of cognition, and of his sense of all things, remains like a stone,¹ and is for ever exempt

liberation there is the non-existence of that.’ ‘Non-existence of that,’ of body and so forth, because of the absence of virtue and of vice, originary thereof. Such is the import.’ The aphorism brought in is the one hundred and tenth of the fourth Book of the Nyāya-sūtra.

¹ समाधिसृष्टिमोक्षेन ब्रह्मपति | Sānkhya-pravachana-
bhāshya, p. 234. ‘In coercion of thought, in profound sleep, and in emancipation, oneness with Brahma is realized.’ These words form an aphorism, the one hundred and sixteenth of the fifth Book of the Sānkhya-pravachana. The rendering may seem to be free; but it is implied in the original. Again: सूपत्यादि यो

ब्रह्मभावस्तत्त्वार्थशिरागताद् रागादिदोषवशादेव भवति | स

चेदो दोषो ज्ञानेन नाशितस्त्तर्ति सुषुध्यादिस्दद्येवावध्या स्थिरा

भवति सैव मोक्ष इति | Ibid., p. 206. ‘The being one with Brahma in deep sleep, etc., is intermitted solely by reason of the defects, desire and the like, which belong to the mind. When those defects are destroyed by right apprehension, a permanent state takes place, resembling precisely that of deep sleep. The same is emancipation.’

Near the passage from the Dinakari, cited at p. 17, is it said, that, in emancipation, the mind and all species of knowledge are done away with. But the mind, in the Nyāya, is imperishable. The sense in which it is said to be done away with will appear from the annexed extract, from the work just named:

एवमालमनःसंयोगब्रह्मवापारविशिष्टोऽवेव मनसो ज्ञानवारः दुःखपत्या व्यापारनाशेन तद्विशिष्टमनोऽरुपः खनाशसम्भवार्थः |

‘Likewise, since the mind, when possessing the function of conjoining itself with the soul, is, through its product, knowledge, a misery; on the destruction of that function, that
from the distresses of this world. Such is the Systematists' view of emancipation and of the supreme aim of man. From this it is clear, that, agreeably to their tenets, emancipation is simply immunity from misery, and is not a source of any happiness whatsoever."

misery, which is the mind as possessing that function, may be considered as destroyed.'

The purport of this is, that the mind, though it cannot perish, does so virtually, when its functions are definitively discontinued.

That knowledge, with any propriety so called, is not allowed, by the Vedantins, to Brahma, will be shown in the third section of this volume. Emancipation, in their opinion, as in that of the other Systematists, since it is the being identified with Brahma, is, therefore, equally a condition of insensibility.

Sāṇkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, p. 189. 'But what, in that case, becomes of the scripture which lays down that the soul is happiness? The answer is: "Because of there being cessation of misery, only in a loose acceptation does the term happiness denote soul."
Repetition has been avoided in the translation.

Again: गौग्रंथोगे बीजमाहुः विमुक्तिप्रशंसा मन्दानाम्

Ibid. 'The reason of the lax employment of the aforesaid term is stated: "It is in eulogy of emancipation, for behoof of the dull." To move ambition in the dull, or ignorant, the emancipated state, which really is stoppage of misery, soul itself, is lauded to them by the Veda, as happiness.' In these two extracts the sixty-seventh and sixty-eighth aphorisms of the fifth Book of the Sāṇkhya-pravachana are comprehended.
Again, the Systematists all maintain, that the soul has existed from everlasting, and that it is exempt from liability to extinction.¹

Both pleasure and pain are absent in emancipation, according to the Nyāya also. See the passage from the Dinakari, at p. 17.

In the Vedānta, to realize oneness with Brahma is to be liberated; and Brahma, in that system, as having no proper knowledge, can have no proper happiness. This will be shown in the third section.

¹ धीरनादि सतोऽस्याध सिद्धा भोक्तुसार्वादिता।

Sāṅkhyā-sāra, MS fol 16, verso. 'Intellect is without beginning. And therefore its employer, soul, is established to be so.'

• इत्यं च यासार्षणादित्वांशत्मनोऽस्यनादित्वसिद्धावनादिति-
   मारस्य नाशासमवात नियतं सिद्धविति बोधयम्।

Siddhānta-muktāvali: Bibliotheca Indica, vol. ix, p. 38. 'And thus, by the unbeginningness of transmigration, that of soul being proved, and since an unbeginning entity cannot be destroyed, the eternalness of soul is demonstrated. So it is to be understood.'

As regards the Vedānta, the ensuing couplet is in the mouth of every well-read Vedāntin; but it has not been traced beyond the Siddhānta-ratnamālā, a book which the translator has not seen with his own eyes.

जोव ईशो विशुद्धा चित्त विभाग्य तयोद्दियोः।

अतिया तत्ततोयोगः फड़साकमनादयः॥

'The soul, Isa, pure intelligence, i.e. Brahma, the distinctness of the first two, nescience, and its connexion with intelligence; these our six are held to be without beginning.'

Consequently—since all the Systems are agreed as to the maxim, that 'what had no beginning can never have end'—the Vedānta also holds, that soul is immortal.
Furthermore, they all hold that the soul is again and again invested with a corporeal form. Death and birth have, for every soul, always existed. When the soul of a man takes on the body of a beast, it becomes a beast; and, when the soul of a beast takes on the body of a man, it becomes a man. The soul may soar to become a divinity; and it may descend to inform a tree.¹

Another opinion² common to all the Systems is,

¹ A late miscellaneist, more celebrated for versatility and self-confidence than for exactness, has thus expressed himself, in a paper on the Traditions of the Rabbins: 'By a singular improvement on the pagan doctrine of the metempsychosis, there is also a reverse change of bodies; and the spirit which had inhabited the form of a wild beast becomes occasionally the inhabitant of the human shape.'—Selections Grave and Gay, Vol. XIV, p. 238.

² Mr. De Quincey had forgotten, while writing this, what Herodotus—Euterpe, 123—says of the Egyptians; and his researches on 'the pagan doctrine of the metempsychosis' had not extended to India.

The translator avails himself of this opportunity to state, for the information of such as have passed over his preface, that only in a most trifling proportion are the notes of the present volume his own. The few which have suggested themselves to him are sufficiently recognizable, as to their proprietorship, by difference of manner and subject-matter, or by the use of the pronoun of the first person.

²भोक्ता नित्यस्तदर्घ्यचावत तत्कर्मेन्त्वादितवत: ।
महदादिविकाराणां सर्वेषामविशेषत: ॥

Śāṅkhyā-sāra, MS fol. 16, verso. 'The experienceer and user, viz., soul, is eternal, since the greater principle, namely intellect, and all the evolutions from nature, without reservation, are for its sake, and are produced by its works.'
that the formation of the world, and all effects wrought therein, by which souls are in any wise affected,

यत: कर्मीनाधित: कर्मभिर्विकंपणादिपि प्रथामयासवबः विभक्तिस्थितां च प्रवृत्तिरित्यथ: || Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāshya, p. 152. 'Since works had no beginning, therefore, by influence from these also, the chief, i.e. nature, energizes—necessarily and with regularity.'

Other effects besides the fluxional creation of the world are referred to works. यदपि सन्तानो हिरण्यगभोपपादिविभिष्यमेव छिन्नं तथापि तस्य पश्चाद् व्यक्तिमेवो व्यक्तिभीष्यणांशतो नानाल्पमि भवति यथैदानीमेक य पितृविवृद्धैर्देहस्य नानाल्पसशतो भवति पुत्रकन्यादिविभिष्यां देहृपण || तत कारणां || कर्मविशेषां दिति || जीवान्तरणं भोगहेतुकर्मदेरित्यथ: || Ibid., p. 133. 'Though, at the beginning of a world-renovation, but a single, subtle body exists, the appurtenance of Hiranyagarbha, still there takes place, at an after-period, its “distribution into individuals,” i.e. also manifoldness, by partition, in the form of individuals; as, in these times, there is manifoldness, by partition, of the one subtle body of a father, in the form of the subtle bodies of sons, daughters, and so on. The cause of this is exhibited: “From special works,” from the works of other souls, which works are causes of their experience of happiness and misery, and from other things.’ An aphorism, the tenth of the Sāṅkhya-pravachana, Book the third, is expounded in the preceding extract.

आक्षिपति || मूतेम्य नूतुपदानचन्त तदुपदानम् || मूतेम्य इति साक्षारणम् || तथाचादेस्तत्तिरिपेक्षेयो मूतेम्य: परमाणुयो मूतेम्दादेशपदानमार्मभो यथा तथैव तस्य शरीरस्योपदानमार्मम्:
are the result of good and evil works done by souls.

परमाणुभोज्यते निरपेक्षेभ्य इत्ययः। समावने। न साध्यसमेचन।
नोक्तं युक्तं इत्यतत्सः साध्यसमेचन पश्चासमेचन मूदादेवस्य इत्य-भएप्रवाप्रमाणमुः। प्राणनेवमक्षमान नमजनयाॆरथ नतासिद्दिरिति
भा:। Nyāya-sūtra-çṛti, p. 160. ‘It is objected: “Its, the body’s, origination is, like that of other gross material aggregates, from the elements.” The phrase “gross material aggregates” is for the exclusion of other causes. So, then, as the origination, or derivation, of other gross material aggregates, constituted of clay and the like, is from the elements, from atoms, irrespectively of desert; after even the same manner, the origination, or derivation, of that, the animated body, is from atoms, desert apart. This is intended. The elusion is: “Not so; since the example is like what is to be ascertained”. What has been alleged is manadestible, for the example brought forward as analogous is circumstance like what is to be ascertained, or, rather, is circumstance like the minor premis. It being held, by us, that also the production of clay and such like is precisely from atoms in dependence on desert of souls, unproducedness thereby does not belong to them. Such is the import. This extract takes in the one hundred and thirty-third and one hundred and thirty-fourth aphorisms of the Nyāya-sūtra, Book III.

Even the production of a jar—to exemplify thrilling effects—is ascribed, in the Nyāya, to the works of souls: आपकानिधिनि घटे परमाणुश्च पञ्जानीयोत्पत्तो श्याम्भटनाशे पूनेभर्तुषुकादिकमण
रक्षाधोत्यप्ति: तब परमाणव: समवायिकारणतजः संयोगो-समवायिकारणमद्यादिकं निमित्तिकारणम्। Tarka-dipikā, MS fol. 10, recto. ‘In the case of a jar placed in the kiln, when its atoms assume a new hue, the dark-coloured jar is destroyed, and then a red jar is produced, in the order of two atoms
In the Nyāya and Vaiśeṣika, every effect is such combining at first, and then more. Of this red jar atoms are the material cause; contact with fire, the incidental cause; and the desert of souls, and the like, are its impelling cause. The souls meant are those destined to be in any wise aided or harmed by the jar.

The objection is supposed, in the Brahma-sūtra, that, if Īśvara had made the world, he would be hable to the imputation of unequal dealing and cruelty: and disparity is everywhere and at all times before us. In reply, there is the aphorism. वैष्णव-नैवेद्ये न साप्तध्वात तथाहि दर्शयति। ‘There is no unequal dealing and cruelty in him: because of reference. Thus it is shown.’ Sankara Āchārya comments on this as follows: वैष्णव-नैवेद्ये नेष्टस्य प्रश्वयते। कस्मात् साप्तध्वात्। यदि हि निरपेक्षः केवल इश्वरो विषमां सृष्टि निर्मिती स्यतामेतौ दोषी वैष्णवं नैवेद्यं च। न तु निरपेक्षस्य निर्मातृलभ्यस्ति साप्ते इश्वरो विषमां सृष्टि निर्मिती। किमपेक्षत इति चेद्धर्मीचन्द्रप्रक्षत इति वदामः। अत: सुझ्यमानप्राणित्वाचर्मी-पेक्षा विषमा सृष्टिनिर्मितिः नामयोगिः प्रस्थायिनः। Unequal dealing and cruelty do not attach to Īśvara. Why? because of relativity. If, indeed, Īśvara had independently made this world of inequalities, without reference to the works of souls, those faults would have been predicable of him. He does not, however, so make it, but with reference, as just mentioned. If it be asked what he has reference to, we reply, to merit and to demerit. Therefore, this world of inequalities is owing to the merit and demerit of the living creatures that are produced; and so that fault, namely of making a world of inequalities, is not chargeable upon Īśvara.’ The MS from which this passage was
a result.¹ Be it ever so trivial or insignificant, it obeys the general law. Let an atom start up in the air, and travel a distance of no more than four fingers; taken—occurring in the first quarter of the second book of Śankara’s Brahma-sātra-bhāshya—is not at present accessible to the translator.

All changes passing on in the world, in fact, are set to the account of the works of souls. Thus, एते ज्ञानिनं ब्रह्मणि कल्पितमुक्तं। तत्रैव समकल्पना दर्शिति। पुनरपिति। जाग्यः-द्वितीयमीवर्मण्यानन्तरः पुनःशब्दार्थः। समेतहनुक्तमौनवे च सतो-विनोच्यते। Anandajñāna’s gloss on Śankara Āchārya’s commentary on the Māṇḍākya Upanishad: Bibliotheca Indica, Vol. VIII, p. 327. ‘By this it is expressed, that what is beheld in the waking state, i.e., all that is perceived, is imagined in Brahma. That what is seen in dreams is imagined in the same is next declared: “Again, also,” etc. By the word “again” is intended “after the exhaustion of a given quantity of merit and demerit, the cause of a given measure of what is allotted to the waking state.” “Also” indicates “when the works which are the cause of dreams present themselves for requital.”’

What is meant by ‘imagined in Brahma’ will be seen early, in the third section.

¹कार्मात्रं प्रति साधारणकारणानि इश्वरतज्जन्मेच्छात्कतयः।
प्रागभावविकालगद्ध्यानि। Tarkāmyila, MS fol. 3, recto. ‘Causes common to all effects are God, His knowledge, will, and activity, antecedent, non-existence, time, space, and desert of souls.’

Whether the following words of Vijnāna Bhikshu deliver a tenet held by any philosophy but the Yoga, is a point to be decided by further inquiry than is now practicable. किष्कसकाशि
द्रष्याणामनार्मिकाश्यनुक्षणमण्यतां किया स्वस्वस्मता न च
so far as we can perceive, it works no advantage or prejudice to any one; and yet, either directly or indirectly, some soul or other will, without fail, be affected thereby, for good or for evil, in a greater or in a lesser degree. And so it cannot but be acknowledged, that even this slight circumstance had place in consequence of the acts of souls.

That the world originated from a material cause, is likewise a doctrine of all the Systems.\(^1\) That, out of

\[\text{तब धर्मौऽधमोऽ वा कारण कस्यारिपि भोगाहेतुल्बात्। नासिपि} \\
\text{तत्रेक्षसदुपादिः कारण गौरवात्। अतो निर्माणकुक्रियाप} \\
\text{शुपपद्ये लावबने गुणलेवैव सामान्यत: प्रक्तिकारणवात् प्रक्र} \\
\text{तिश्वातन्यं सिद्धम्।} \]

\(^{1}\) In the Sāṅkhya, nature is so; in the Nyāya, atoms; and, in the Vedānta, ignorance, or illusion.

The appellations given, in various systems, to the material cause of the universe are rehearsed in this couplet:

\[\text{नामस्वपनिमित्तं यस्मि सन्तिष्टते जगत्।} \\
\text{तमाहः प्रकृति कचिन्म मायामयं परेल्पनू।} \]
which anything is made, or from which anything proceeds, is called its material cause. Clay is such a cause of a jar; and gold, of a golden ornament. As every effect must have a material cause, the Systematists deem the ultimate material cause of all effects to be without a beginning.¹

Since, then, souls are considered to be without beginning, and so the ultimate material cause of the world, and since birth and death, and the doing good and evil works, and the arranging and disarranging of the multitudinous constituents of the world, in order that those works may reap their fruit, have been going on from eternity; it is patent, that the maintainers of the six Systems regard the world as having always had existence. To be sure, during its history, it has, from time to time, been resolved into its elements, and then evolved again; the gross world being sublimated, on the occurrence of this resolution, into its subtile material cause;² but, as those mutations have

¹ Cited, as from the Brhad-rasishthu, in the Patanjala-bhāshya-vārttika, MS fol. 74, recto. 'That in which the world resides, when divested of name and form, some call nature; others, illusion; others, atoms.'

But it must not be supposed, from this, that the different systematists consent in respect of the nature of the world's material cause.

¹ That this is the opinion of the Sāṅkhyaśas and Naiyāyaśikas is too well known to require citations in proof. For the Vedānta, see the passage at p. 26, where ignorance is reckoned as one of six eternals.

² Speaking of the consummation of all things, Vijnāna Bhikshu says: अस्य बिकारज्ञतस्य खस्तकारणोऽप्रक्ष्यादिपि संसगद...
always been taking place, the stream of the world has been flowing on from eternity.¹

Once more, all the Systematists receive the words of the Veda as unquestionable authority; and they

¹अनादिरिम्बायन्तः कालो नास्तोस्य द्विज विच्छेत् ।
अव्युच्चिन्तास्तत्थं सर्गोपितांसंयमः ॥

इष्यादिवाकर्त्तनेऽभिः सुष्ठिप्रशास्यावनाविक्त्रदन्तवस्यादिपि सिद्धे
* * * भूयान्त्ते विश्वामायानिवित्तिरिलिन्ते श्रुतिः मायार्य-प्रकटे
प्रलये व्यावारोपमाह्यं निवित्तिसमव वदति ।
Patanjala-bhāshya-vārttika, MS fol. 176, verso. "Adorable time is beginningless, and there is no end of it, O twice-born. These, consequently, are unintermitted, namely, the creation, continuance, termination, and quiescence of the world." Since, by hundreds of such statements, it is settled, that, as the outflowing of the world had no beginning, so it has no end. . . . Moreover, the scripture, "And further, there is, at last, the surcease of all illusion," speaks of that surcease only which is known as the ceasing of the operation, in the universal dissolution of the world, of nature, called, in the words cited, illusion.'

In the aphorism which occurs before the extract from the Brahma-sūtra-bhāshya, given at page 28, it is asserted, that Īsvara makes this world of inequalities with reference to the works of souls. What follows, derived from the same work, puts forward an objection, and rebuts it in the very next aphorism; the commentator elucidating the whole: न कमीसिविभागार्दितिचेन्
also accept, as warrants, the Smritis, the Puranas, etc., the work of Rishis. when those books do not thwart with the Veda.

The foregoing are the leading dogmas of the Systems; and, with trifling modifications, all the Systems hold them.

An examination of these dogmas is fraught with very great benefit; for one gains, by it, an acquaintance with the general bias of the minds of the pandits.

नासनादिलितां तर्तेव सौम्येषस्म आसोदेवमैवत्मानाद्विद्वियतिमि प्राक्क
सूचित्रविभागवधारणां न्यासेत कर्म यद्येक्षा विषमा सृष्टिः
स्यां सूचित्रकाले हि शरीरादिविभागपेश्वं कर्म कर्मिपेश्वशः
शरीरादिविभाग इतिितर्थाराद्यः। प्रत्यक्षः। अतो विभागाद्यवं
कर्मिपेश्व इश्वरः प्रत्यत्तां नाम। प्राक्क विभागाद वैचित्र्य,
निमित्तस्य कर्मणोभावानं तथ्यं वाच्या सृष्टिः प्रामोत्तति चेन
नैष दोषोनादिलितां संसारस्य। भवेदेष दोषो यजादिमानू
संसारः स्यां। अनादौ तु संसारे बोजाकुक्रहेतिहेतुमक्रावेन
कर्मणः सुरविश्वस्य च प्रवृत्तति विभूत्येतः।

"If it be said, that there are no works, for that there is no diverseness, it is denied; because of unbeginningness." The absence of diverseness, i.e. of the diversified development of things, prior to creation being certified by these utterances "Meek one, this was, at first, merely existent," and "One only, without a second," there are then no works, with reference to which a creation of inequalities could originate: and, if works were supposed to have place subsequently to creation, mutual dependence would be the result; that is to say, works
I now proceed to sketch the more important doctrines among those which characterize the Systems severally, the Vedānta excepted.

The tenets of the Sāṅkhya and Yoga are these. Nature and soul are the ultimate bases of all existent things. Souls are eternal and many. Nature is unintelligent substance, and is the material cause of the world. It consists of goodness, passion, and darkness, in equal proportions. And here it should be borne

must require diversified development of things, bodies, etc., and the diversified development of things, bodies, etc., must require works. Let it be, therefore, that Īsvara acts in dependence on works, after the diversified development of things. There being, before such development, no works causative of inequalities, it follows, that the first creation ought to be one of uniform equalities. The answer to this is, that it, the argument, is of no weight, "because of the unbeginningness" of the course of the world. It would have weight, if the course of the world had a beginning. But the continuous operation, in the beginningless course of the world, of works and of inequalities of creation, as mutual causes and effects, after the manner of the seed and the sprout, is not incompatible.'

1 गुणा एव प्रकृतिशब्दवाच्या: न तु तदतिरिक्ता प्रकृति-रस्तील्यवधार्यति । प्रते गुणा इति । प्रते सत्ताद्यो गुणा एव प्रकृतिशब्दवाच्या भवन्ति । Pātanjala-bāṣhya-vārttika, MS fol. 78, verso. 'The gunas themselves are denoted by the word nature; and nature does not differ from them. Thus is this pronounced: "These gunas, etc.,"; these selfsame gunas, goodness and the rest, are what is signified by the term nature.'

In the sixty-first aphorism of the Sāṅkhya-pravachana, Book I, nature is said to be the equilibrium of goodness, passion, and darkness. On this declaration Vijnāna Bhikshu remarks:

तेषां सत्तादिद्वायाः या साम्यावस्थान्यूनातिरितिवाच्या
in mind, that it is not the goodness, passion, and darkness, popularly reckoned qualities or particular states of the soul, that are intended in the Sāṅkhya. In it they are unintelligent substances.\footnote{Nature is not, then, a sustrāma of the gunas, but the very gunas in a certain state, that of equivalence.} Otherwise, how could they be the material cause of earth and

\begin{quote}
Sāṅkhya-pravachana-khaśya, p. 45, 'The “equilibrium” of those substances, “goodness” and so forth, i.e. a state in which none is less or more; in short, a state in which there is not aggregation of less and more. The extractive import is, the state of not being an effect. The gunas, taken collectively, when characterized by the condition of not being effects, make up nature. Such is the sense.'
\end{quote}

\footnote{The term guna is applied, in this system, and also in the Veda and elsewhere, to these, goodness, passion, and darkness,}
like gross things. From nature arise effects, to require the good and evil works of souls. First, among these effects, arises the great principle, or intellect; and, from it, the organ of egoism: and these, too, are unintelligent substances. From the organ of egoism proceed eleven instruments and five rudiments. The latter are tenuous sources of the gross elements, earth and the rest. The eleven instruments derived from the organ of egoism are the senses of sight, hearing, smell, taste, and touch, with the tongue, hands, feet, anal orifice, organ of generation, and mind. Intellect, the organ of egoism, and mind are all termed internal

because they are appliances of the soul, and because they form the triple-stranded rope, i.e. the great principle, namely, intellect, and the rest, which hands the soul a beast, as it were.

Guna, it must be observed, signifies rope, or cord, and, likewise, quality; but not here, as we have seen.

1 In the Sānkhya, it is not only the works of souls that move nature to bring about reward of good and evil, in the development of the world, etc; but nature has itself an intrinsic power of acting on behalf of the soul.

2 अहंकारश्वास्मिन्युपास्तिकम्यं करणद्रव्यं न त्वभिमान-मालम्।

Sānkhya-pravachana-bhāshya, p. 49. ‘And the egoizer is a substantial internal organ, having self-consciousness for its affection. It is not self-consciousness alone, but inclusive thereof.

All the principles of the Sānkhya—intellect, the organ of egoism, and mind, being, of course, among them—are said to be substances. अर्थं च पञ्चविन्दितको गणो त्रयाक्ष्य एव। Ibid., p. 46. ‘And this group of twenty-five principles is substantial.’

Dr. J. R. Ballantyne has strangely written: ‘Souls alone are, in the Sānkhya, regarded as substances.’—Christianity contrasted with Hindu Philosophy, p. xxvii.
organs, or, collectively, the internal organ. Certitude is the distinguishing property of intellect; to evolve self-consciousness, that of the organ of egoism; and to cognize discriminatively, that of mind.

1 It seems, oftentimes, as if there were not three organs, so much as one tripartite organ. Each is, however, frequently found styled an organ. अन्तःकारणमेकमेव वीजादुर्महाब्रह्मा-दिवदक्षियत्यमालभेदात् कार्यकारणमासमाप्त: इति च प्रागेवोक्तम्। अतएव वायुमाध्ययो:। मनो महान् पतित्रिमि पूर्वचिद: क्यात्तिनिर:। इति मनोब्रूहोराकर्यायिलवस्तुविमित:। Ibid., p. 117. 4 The internal organ, though single, comes to be, in itself, partly cause and partly effect, by virtue merely of its distinction into three states, those of intellect, egoiser and mind; like the seed, the germ, and the full-grown tree; as has been said higher up. For this same reason, in the verse of the Vāyu and Mātasya, two of the Purāṇas, “Mind, the great principle, understanding, Brahma, city, intellect, knowledge, and Īśvara,” mind and intellect are exhibited as synonyms.'

चित्तमतः करणसामान्यमेक्ष्योवार्तिकः करणस्य इतिभेदमार्गेः
चतुर्नाति दृश्ये विभागात्। Pātanjala-bhāṣya-vārttika, MS fol. 4, recto. ‘“The thinker,” the internal organ in general; since, in this system, that organ, which is one only, has, simply on account of its possessing a variety of affections, a fourfold division.’

Thus, while, in the Sānkhya, the internal organ has three members, in the Yoga it has four. The Vedānta herein agrees with the Yoga.

2 अध्यवसायो बृद्धि:। ‘Intellect is certitude.’ So runs
the thirteenth aphorism of the *Sāṅkhya-mavachana*, Book II. Vijnāna Bhikshu remarks on it: महत्त्ववस्य पर्यायों वृद्धिरित ।
अथ्यवसायिक निश्चयप्रक्ष्टस्यासाधिक वृत्तिरित्यथ: । अभिमुद्धेनर्दर्शतु धर्मविध्यभेददत । *Sāṅkhya-mavachana-bhāṣya*, p. 115.

‘Intelect is a synonym of the great principle. And its distinguishing affection is certitude, or assurance. As for the enunciation of them as identical, it is because of the non-difference between a property and that to which it belongs.’

In definition of egoism, it is said. अभिमानोऽहकरोऽतिरितज्ञ: ।
अहकरोतिरितज्ञ: कुम्भकारविदत: करण्ड्रव्य स च धर्मविध्य-

It makes (karatī) I (aham): hence it is termed egoizer. Compare kumbhakāra, maker of jars, or potter. It is a substantial internal organ; and it is called egoism, because of the non-difference between a property and that to which it belongs.’

Strictly speaking, then, egoism is the property of the organ of egoism.

Mind is thus characterized by Vāchaspāti Misra; तदर्थारणेण रूपेण रूप्यति सदृशपक्षाततमन: । सदृशप्पेण रूपेण मनो लैक्षयते । आलोचितपिन्दित्रयेण वस्तिविद्विविषिति सम्प्राधिनिमित्वं नेिव-
मिति सम्यक्करुप्यति । *Tattva-kaumudi*, p. 34. ‘That, mind, is defined by a statement of its distinguishing nature: “Mind”, here is a cognizer discriminatively. Mind is defined by its characteristic, cognizing discriminatively. A thing is at first, indistinctly, perceived, by the senses, in the notion “This is something.” Then the mind thoroughly settles, “It is of this sort, not of that.”’

The translator has conformed, in the English of the body of the page, to this explanation of sankalpa.
Soul, say the Sāṅkhya, is sheer knowledge. But, on examination, it turns out to be, with them, only nominally so. For, in all knowledge, properly so called, there is apprehension, or cognition, of some object; as, this is a jar, this is cloth, etc. In the Sāṅkhya, however, it is not this apprehension or cognition, that is soul, or even a quality thereof: this

Vijnāna Bhikshu dissents from the foregoing view, and assigns to the mind a function in addition to sañkalpa. तथा च बुद्द्रुतिर्द्विचिरध्यवसायोंभिमानोशहुक्तार्थ सदुक्ल्यविचल्पं मनस इत्यायायतम्। सदुक्ल्यविचल्पेष्ठः सदुक्ल्यः कर्मविमानविम्यंशामनान्।
विकल्पस्तं संशयो योगोत्तमस्मिथविलोपो वा न न विग्रहित्रायन्। तस्य बुद्द्रुतिर्द्विचिरिबद्वि । Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, p. 122. 'And thus it follows, that the chief affection of intellect is certitude; that of the egoizer, egotism, and that those of the mind are resolution (sankalpa) and irresolution (vikalpa). Resolution is the willing to do: agreeably to the canon, "Resolution is the mental act." Irresolution is either indecision, or a specific kind of misapprehension spoken of in the Yoga. It is not the cognizing a thing together with its properties; for this, namely, thus to cognize, is an affection of intellect.'

1 ज्ञान नैवासस्तम्नो ध्रमों न गुणो वा कथवनः।
ज्ञानस्तत्त्प एवासस्त्मा नित्यः पूर्णः सदाशिवः।

इति। Cited in the Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, p. 96. 'Knowledge is not at all a property of the soul; nor is it, in any way, a quality of it. The soul is knowledge itself, and is eternal, full, or self-sufficing, and ever happy.'

Vijnāna professes to have taken this couplet from a Smṛiti: but he does not designate the Smṛiti by name.
apprehension being an evolution from the internal organ. This organ, it is averred, assumes the form

1 Several of the notes next after the excursus which here begins would have been divorced from the pages to which they severally belong, had this excursus been subjoined—as else it would have been—to the end of the paragraph of the text, on the insentience of the soul and the sentience of the internal organ.

To any tyto in the Sānkhya and Vedānta it is notorious, that cognition is an affection of the internal organ. Here is, however, a passage in proof of the assertion. अध्यवसायश्च बुद्धिव्यापारो ज्ञाति । उपात्त्विप्याणामिनिद्रियाणा बृत्ती सत्यं बुद्धिस्तमोर्मिभवें सति य: सत्वसुमुद्रे: सोऽध्यवसाय इति च वृत्तिरिति च ज्ञातिमिति चार्यायायेन । Tattva-latamud', p. 8 । । 'And sentiency is the operancy of intellect, it is cognition. An affection having taken place of any one of the senses, after they have apprehended their respective objects, the intellect's darkness being overpowered, the intellect's preponderance of goodness is called sentiency, and affection, and cognition.'

As nature, the great root, is compounded of three substances goodness, passion, and darkness, so are all its derivates, intellect, etc., etc.; the constituent parts being variously proportioned for each. Intellect, when darkness overweighs in it, is torpid, and, when goodness does so, is vivid, and cognizes.

It is not tropically, but literally, that the affection of the internal organ is said to be cognition. It is not an instrument of cognition, but cognition itself. This is evident from the ensuing words: तथाबुद्धिवद्ध्यो नामज्ञातार्तिक्षितं ज्ञानं चोक्षु-खादीनाम्ज्ञातसत्त्वात्सीकरैः तेष्वपि घटादात्मिव संख्यायद्भिप्रकृत्यात्महि जानामि न वा सुखो न वेयादिप्रेपेन । Sānkhya-pravachana-bhāshya, p. 210. । 'And those affections of intellect are never unrecognized. If an unrecognized existence of cognition, desire, happiness, etc., were granted, it must follow, that, just as men are
of a jar, of cloth, etc. etc., and this evolution is called sometimes doubtful about a jar, or the like, whether it be existent, or non-existent, they would have doubt about them: this doubt taking the form of "Do I cognize, or not?" "Am I happy, or not?".

This language, it is palpable, is relevant only as regards veritable cognition, that which the Naiyāyikas thus denominate.

Cognition, as being an affection of the internal organ, is, therefore, seen to be a thing not belonging to the soul.

A reflection of the affection cognition, it is moreover maintained, is cast on the soul. But what is this? Is it a matter of which any of us are conscious? According to the Sāṅkhya, it is a cognition of the affection cognition just spoken of. Thus:

यथा चैतन्ये बुद्धः प्रतिविम्बः स चास्फात्विपयः सह बुद्धभिन्नार्यभिमयते ।

Ibid., p. 73. ‘And the reflection, in intelligenced, or the soul, of intellect is held in order to account for the soul’s cognition of intellect, along with the objects borne by it.’ Again:

यथा चैतन्ये बुद्धिर्गतिसार्थस्यमुलं चैतन्यस्य बुद्धिक्षर्या-कारतामपरिमितमेव चैतन्यस्यार्थोपरतब्रूत्तिमानम् ।

Pāṇḍjala-bhāṣya-vārttika, MS fol. 8 verso. ‘And this forementioned assimilation of intelligence to the affection of intellect, its becoming of like aspect thereto, this very thing is the cognition, by intelligence, or soul, of the affection of intellect which has taken the shape of the object cognized.’

The Naiyāyikas hold four species of right notion (pramāṇa), to each of which corresponds an instrument suited to it (prāmāṇā); but, in the Sāṅkhya, these four species become three, by the inclusion in inference (anumāṇa), of cognition from recognizing similarity (upamāṇa). These species of right notion become, however, in the Sāṅkhya, instruments of other right notions lying beyond,—reflections, in the soul, of the former,—they at the same time retaining their character of right notions as regards their instruments, the senses, etc. The Sāṅkhya has, therefore, two sets of species of right notion, and as many
an affection. Thus, the cognition ‘This is a jar’, or
of instruments adapted to them. Vijnana Bhikshu says: सा न
त्रयोंबुद्धिपूरणयोग्यं धम्मं भवतु किंवैक्ष्मत्मालयं। Sankhya-
पवाचानं–भाष्यं, p. 64 ‘And whether it, right notion,
be a property of both intellect and soul, or of but one of the
two’, etc.

By ‘property of intellect’ is meant affection of intellect; and,
‘by property of soul’, reflection, in the soul, of that affection.

In the same page with the Sanskrit last cited we read: अत
यदि प्रमाणपञ्च फलं पुष्पनिष्ठामयुत्क्ष्टे तदा वृद्धिवृत्तिरेव
प्रमाणम। यदि च बृद्धिनिष्ठामयुत्क्ष्टे तदे दिग्दिकपरिष्ठिकरूपे
प्रमाणम। पुष्पस्व प्रमाणाद्येव न प्रमार्यति। यदि च पोषण
परेयवोधो वृद्धिवृत्तिकोम्यमपि प्रमोच्यते तदा तूक्षमभयेत् प्रमाण-
मेदेन प्रमाणं संवन्धि। ‘Here, if the fruit, right notion, is supposed
to reside in soul alone, the affection of intellect exclusively is
an instrument of right notion. and, if in intellect alone, the
contact of a sense, etc., are exclusively such an instrument. As
for the soul, it is only the witness of right notions, not the
subject of them. And, if the soul’s apprehension and the
intellectual affection are equally reckoned right notions, both the
aforesaid, namely, the affection of intellect and the contact of
a sense, etc., are instruments of right notion relatively to those
notions respectively.’

But the soul’s apprehension is considered, by the Sankhyas,
as the principal sort of right notion: पातङ्गललभाष्यं तु व्यासदेवः
पुष्पनिष्ठबोधः प्रमेयः। पुष्पाभयमेव करणानां प्रवृत्या फलस्य
पुष्पनिष्ठताया एवौचित्या। अतोऽस्वाति स एव मुद्यः।
‘This is cloth’, is an affection of the internal organ.

सिद्धान्तः | Ibid., p. 65. ‘But, in the commentary on Patanjali, Vyasa says, that apprehension resident in the soul is right notion. For it is fitting, that the fruit should reside in the soul only, inasmuch as the operation of instruments is for it. Therefore, in this Sankhya system likewise, the same, the position that the soul’s apprehension is right notion, is the foremost opinion among the three enumerated.’

It has been stated, that the reflexion, in the soul, of the internal organ’s affection is the cognition of that affection, itself a cognition. But this cognition of cognition is not analogous to that which, in the Nyaya, is styled supervenient apprehension (anuvyavasaya), or consciousness of cognizing. In this system, primary apprehension (vyavasaya) is in the form, for example, of ‘This is a jar’, and the relative supervenient apprehension is, ‘I cognize the jar’. This primary apprehension is, as we know, in the Sankhya, an affection of the internal organ, exemplified by ‘This is a jar’, etc.; and the reflexion, in the soul, of such primary apprehension, to which the Sankhyas give the name of psychic apprehension, agrees with it in form. That is to say, it is ‘This is a jar’, not ‘I cognize the jar’. To show this, a passage lately given is here repeated, with its continuation. यद्चेत्ठ्येऽः बुद्धिनिष्ठाः प्रभुत्वात् चेत्नयस्य बुद्धिनिष्ठाकारताः प्रभुत्वात् चेत्नयस्यार्थं परत्र व्यविभानयम्।

तस्य ।

वाम्तकारोप्य ।

घोषस्य ।

इत्यादिनिष्ठ प्रथात्म्या बुद्धिनिष्ठाः प्रभुत्वात् ।

तस्य ।

न तु बुद्धिभोगस्य प्रथात्म्यारोपस्तिः ।

‘And this forementioned assimilation of intelligence to the affection of intellect, its, becoming of like aspect thereto, this very thing is the cognition, by intelligence, or soul, of the affection of intellect which has taken the shape of the object cognized. And the form of this psychic cognition is precisely such as ‘This is a jar’ etc. Else, the aforesaid assimilation of intelligence to the affection of intellect could not be established. The form of the cognition of the affection is not different from that of the affection itself.
But, in consequence of the proximity to each other

The writer goes on to say, that a cognition in the form of ‘I cognize the jar’, which the Naiyāyikas call a supervenient apprehension, is only another affectation of the internal organ.

As for the cognition “I cognize the jar”, “I am miserable”, or the like, it is merely another form of intellect. For the soul is immutable, and unobnoxious to error.

For the soul to acquire cognitions would presuppose it exposed to mutability, argue the Sāṅkhyaists. They further maintain, that, in all cognitions, such as ‘I know’, etc., etc., there is something of erroneousness; for any notion implicating ‘I’ unifies the soul with the internal organ. To keep good the ground, that the soul never changes, nor errs, the theory was set on foot, that all cognitions arise in the mind, and that only their reflexions touch the soul, and yet without at all affecting its essence.

But the doctrine, alike of the Sāṅkhya and of the Nyāya, that cognition and the consciousness of cognition are separate in fact is inadmissible. When I cognize a jar, simultaneously I become conscious that I do so. What the Naiyāyikas term supervenient apprehension, arising after the primary, cannot be cognition: it is remembrance. The Sāṅkhyaist reflexion, in the soul, of the primary cognition—their affectation of intellect—is not, however, thought, by them, to present itself subsequently, but at the same time. Still, in postulating that reflexion as a cognition of the primary cognition, and as separate in fact, they also mistake. This kind of cognition of a cognition is not a thing of which any of us is cognizant; and it is to be rejected as a figment.

As is primary cognition, so likewise the cognition of it, a reflexion of it, is an evolution from the internal organ. For all reflexions, as that of the sun in water, are, agreeably to the Sāṅkhya, evolutions of intellect. Near the extracts recently made from the Pāṇṭanjalā-bhāṣhya-vārttika, we are told:
of the internal organ and the soul, each is reflected

ा एतेन नीहपरादव्युद्धिपुरुषयोर्योन्यप्रतिविम्बत्वं न सम्बवतीय-पास्तम्। उभयन्त्रोभयाकाराल्पद्धपरिणामस्येव प्रतिविम्बशब्दे सनाते विविधतबतात्। जलादात्रां सूयीयाकाराल्पद्धपरिणामस्येव सू-यूयीप्रतिविम्बवाच्। By this is repelled the objection, that, since intellect and soul are colourless, there can be no reflexion of them in each other. For, by the vocable ‘reflexion’ is here intended an evolution from intellect, in the likeness of each, cast upon each, i.e., in soul, in the similitude of intellect, and, in intellect, in the similitude of soul: and also because the reflexion of the sun, etc., in water, etc., is nothing but an evolution from intellect, in the likeness of the sun, etc.

We thus see, that the Sānkhyas consider not only primary cognition, but their secondary cognition also, fictitious as it is, to be merely an evolution from the internal organ, and no quality or true affection of the soul. The relation of such secondary cognitions to the soul is no more intimate than that of a bird to the branch on which it perches.

The psychic apprehension of the Sānkhyas, the reader should rest assured, is the very reflexion of the internal organ’s affection, and not something produced, by that reflexion, in the soul’s nature. From the passage of the Paññijala-bhāṣya-vārttika, at page 49, it is manifest, that the soul’s cognition of an intellectual affection is identically the reflexion of it, there spoken of as the assimilation of intelligence to that affection. Further proofs of this are as follows:

प्रमाणां चेतन: शुद्ध: प्रमाणं वृत्तिरेव न:।
प्रमाणार्थिकारुप्तिभिम् चेतने प्रतिविम्बवाच्॥

इति। Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, p. 57. ‘With us, the possessor of right notion is the pure intelligent one, soul; and
in the other. Hence, the affections of the internal
the instrument of right notion is affection of the internal organ. Right notion is reflexion, in the intelligent one, of the affections aforesaid, which have assumed the forms of the objects cognized by those affections.'

Of the three opinions touching right notion, its instruments, and its subject mentioned at pp. 48-9, the one there designated as most eminent is adopted above.

Vyāsa’s commentary on the Yoga Aphorisms states, that intellect notthes things to the soul. This notification is explained by the annotator, निषेदनं च स्वाभविषयं प्रतिविचिन्द्रप्रेण चिन्तावानम्। Pātanjala-bhāṣya-vārttika, MS fol 7. recto.

‘And notification is intellect’s depositing in intelligence, or soul, objects borne by itself, in the shape of reflexions.

एतदुः क्रितिः। यदवपि पुरुषप्रतिस्थितायोऽविचारी तथापि बुद्धिविषयकार्त्तिता पुरुषे यानि प्रतिविचिन्द्रानि तान्येव पुरुषस्य वृत्तयः। न च ताभिनिकस्तुभूताभिः परिणामित्वम्।’ Ibid. ‘The drift is thus: though the soul, is sheer intelligence, and unalterable, still the reflexions, in the soul, of the affections of intellect, which have taken on the forms of the objects cognized, are the soul’s affections. And there cannot be, in consequence of these unreal affections, any alteration in the soul.’

Hence we are to understand, that the reflexions themselves, in the soul, of the internal organ’s affections, which may be cognition, will, activity, happiness, or misery, are the soul’s cognition or knowing, and the soul’s experience of will, activity, etc., etc. They are designated as false, in the Sāṅkhya, not because they are nonentities, but because they are not what they seem to be; that is to say, however they may appear to be affections of the soul, they are not so in reality, and work no change of any sort in its nature. Consistently enough, the Sāṅkhyaas apply the epithet ‘unreal’ to the reflexion of a rose in crystal. Here again, according to them, the reflexion
organ, in the shape of a jar, of cloth, etc., are reflected is not non-existent. Only it does not belong inherently to the crystal, to which it seems so to belong.

Tattva-kaumudi, p. 8. "This, soul—by reason of the cognition, the happiness, etc., which actually reside in the principle intellect—from receiving their reflexions, and from being assimilated thereto, as it were, becomes possessed of cognition, happiness, and the rest. In this wise is the intelligent one, soul, benefited by them, these reflexions."

Vijnana Bhikshu, speaking of the soul, which is named, in the text he is scholiasizing, by a word of the feminine gender, says:

The specific qualities which the Vaiseshikas refer to the soul are cognition, will, and happiness, among others. These, as we perceive, the Sankhyas altogether deny to the soul.

Moreover, since the discrimination of the soul from other things than intellect may be acquired even from the Nyaya and Vaiseshika, the peculiar office of the Sankhya and Yoga, and common to them, is the discrimination of soul from intellect."
in the soul. Consequently, the reflection, in the soul,

It is because the Nyāya and Vaśeshika describe soul so as to make it one with the Sāṅkhya ‘intellect’, that Vijnāna Bhikshu reputes those doctrines inadequate to communicate, in its integrity, a correct knowledge of discrimination.

The origination, in the soul, of cognitions would betoken the soul to be changeable; and it is argued, by the Sāṅkhya, that it is unchangeable. सामान्यगुणातिरिक्तधर्मोत्तथाविपरिणामिववहारान् | Sāṅkhya-prarachana-bhāṣya, p. 22. ‘Because, solely on account of the rise of properties other than the common qualities, a thing is said to have undergone a change.’

Those other properties are the specific qualities lately referred to. They include cognition, will colour, taste, etc.

अथ्यात्मिकेऽर्थार्थग्रहणश्चार्थार्थविच चेतनि स याहरिकारः

पुष्पे परिणामो न सम्बवतीत्थिति प्रतिविवट्ठपएव पर्यवाग्य-तीनि दिक् | Ibid., p. 73. ‘And also because by the expression ‘cognizing an object’ is meant simply assimilation to an object. And that assimilation to an object cannot be, in the case of the soul, from alteration; as happens in the case of the internal organ. By consequence, it turns out to be exclusively in the form of reflexion. Such is the direction indicated.’

ननु निर्गुणः एव का युक्तिरिति चेदृष्यते | पुष्पस्य-क्षायास्तावान् नियम न सम्भवनि जन्यताप्रत्यक्षानि | जन्यगुणा-

ज्ञीकारे परिणामिविपन्निनः | Ibid., p. 96. ‘But, if the ground of the souls being thought void of qualities be enquired, the reply is, that the soul's will, etc., cannot be eternal; for their originatedness is evidenced by consciousness. If originated qualities of soul were admitted, it would be incident to mutation.’

Cognition is here denoted by the suppletive expression after ‘will’.
of the affection apprehension is the soul's apprehen-

ननु पुरुषस्यापरिणामित्रन्युक्तस्थापने क्रिमिति साधयोग-
योगायम् इति चैत श्रूणु । यदि हि पुरुषस्य ज्ञानारिदिलक्षणार्थमः
कथन मोक्षे नस्येत व्ययदोपेण नष्ठा दारिज्जुन मोक्षों न परत-
पुरुषार्थः स्यादिति । Pātanjala-bhāṣya-vārttika, MS fol. 164, 
verso. 'But, should it be asked, why the Sāṇkhya and Yoga
are so eager to establish that soul is immutable, hearken. If,
in the state of emancipation, any property of the soul, such as
cognition and the like, were to perish, then, owing to this defect
of loss, emancipation could not, any more than penury be the
supreme aim of the soul.'

The meaning is, that such evanescent things as cognition,
will, and so forth, cannot have existence in the state of liberation.
If they were the soul's qualities, the soul would lose something
by being liberated. Hence, to save it from liability to loss,
they are represented as having never belonged to the soul.

न नियम्यानियज्ञानसम्भव इति । Sāṇkhya-pravachana-
bhāṣya, p. 36. 'Non-eternal cognition cannot appertain to the
eternal soul.'

Attention should be paid to the circumstance, that, in the
Sāṇkhya, the term 'cognition' (jñāna) denotes two distinct things.
One of them is that which we all so denominate. This is really
the apprehending of objects; and, to us, this alone deserves the
name it bears. This cognition is that on which we have
hitherto been dwelling. But, again, the Sāṇkhya-s apply the
appellation of cognition to the soul itself, which they also style
intelligence, the intelligent one, etc. Here, however, cognition
is so but nominally; as it is not one with apprehension of objects.

Cognition as denoting soul, it is laid down, is eternal. तस्मान
नियाम्यान ज्ञान नित्यं Sāṇkhya-sāra, MS fol. 17, recto. 'There-
fore, the cognition of soul, which soul itself is eternal, is eternal.'

That this cognition, by which the soul itself is intended, is
sion. In the Sāṅkhya doctrine, then, whether apprehension be considered as an affection of the internal
cognition only in name, is thus shown. न प्रेत्य संज्ञास्तत्ताति
पूर्ववाक्ये यान्त्रिक्येन मोक्षकाले शास्त्रकृप श्रुणो न
जानातीत्युत्तमसिद्धः; वभोगिनिविद्धिषु परमपुरुषार्थेमोक्षेप्रद-
शीयिततुम्। Pālanjala-bhāṣya-vāntika, MS fol. 136, verso.

‘In the foregoing sentence, Yāpavalkya,—for the purpose of setting forth, that, in liberation there is the attainment of the
soul’s supreme aim, which is the removal of the experience of all misery,—has, by the words “After departure there is no
consciousness”, expressed, that the soul, though essentially cognition, knows nothing throughout the duration of liberation.’

Thus, even when liberated, the soul continues to be cognition. If this cognition were that which apprehends objects, the soul
would be cognizant. Yet it does not possess, when emancipated, any more sentence than a stone.
The cognition just spoken of, that which does not apprehend, is eternal. The other, which apprehends, and which resides in
the soul, as a reflexion, is non-eternal.

चेतोपरारागगतात साहृतास्तिपम्य चित्।

इति Sāṅkhya-sāra, MS fol. 26, recto. ‘Also the intelligent one’s witnessing is impermanent; it being the reflexion of
objects.’

Since it is but a reflexion, it lasts only during the presence of that which is reflected.
It has been abundantly made clear, that the cognition in question is not intrinsic to the soul. Nevertheless, the Sāṅkhyas
are wont to use language from which it seems as if they believed, that the soul itself, as reflected into, were this cognition. बस्तन्तो
व्रत्तिवृषोऽहम्। Ibid., fol. 28, recto. ‘In truth, I, soul, am
the cognition of affections of the internal organ.’
organ, or as a reflection, in soul, of that affection, it
does not appertain to soul, or is not intrinsic to it.

But this is deceptive. The explanation is thus. Just as
crystal which is receiving the reflexion of a rose is said to be
red, so the soul, from receiving the reflexion of intellectual
affections, is said to be cognition. In the first case, it is, really,
the reflexion of the rose that is red, and, in the second case,
it is the reflexion of the affections, not soul, that is cognition.

Though the Sānkhyas contend strenuously, that the soul is
incognitae, still, with an uneasy consciousness that their view
in this behalf is not entirely correct, they compound the matter
by giving to the soul the titles of cognition, knowledge, intelli-
gence, etc., and yet refuse to accept the legitimate consequences
of such a procedure. And this fact will assist us to understand
a singularity connected with the Sānkhya system. All such
cognitions as 'I will', 'I am happy', etc., etc., say its advocates,
are erroneous; since qualities which are not proper to the soul
are, thereby, attributed to it. Less erroneous, according to
those philosophers, and erroneous on a different ground, is the
cognition 'I know'. Here, they say, there is not the attribution
to soul of a property alien to it, but, rather, the supposing that
cognition is a property of the soul, whereas it is its essence.
The untenableness of this is obvious. For it is not that cogni-
tion, falsely so called by the Sānkhyas, namely, the essence of
the soul, that is cognized in the consciousness 'I know', but
that cognition which is truly the apprehension of objects. And
this latter cognition is neither the soul itself, nor a property
of it. No more, on account of this cognition, is the soul real
cognition, than it is a real expericencer of happiness and misery,
by reason of the reflexions of them. For, in the Sānkhya,
happiness, misery, will, and activity, no less than cognition,
are evolutions from, and affections of, the internal organ. Their
reflexions, not themselves, come in contact with the soul.

To recapitulate, the Sānkhya holds, that all true cognitions
are evolutions from the internal organ. A primary cognition,
as 'This is a jar', is an affection of that organ, and also an
evolution from it; and its reflexion falls upon the soul. This
reflexion is psychic, or secondary, apprehension; and it likewise
is an evolution from the internal organ.
Similarly, will and activity also are affections of the internal organ. Soul, by reason of receiving their

Furthermore, also the cognition 'I cognize the jar' is an affection of the internal organ. Its history is this. The soul, along with a reflexion of the affection of the internal organ, such as 'This is a jar', is reflected into the internal organ. This second reflexion is the affection of the internal organ in the form 'I cognize the jar', and, like all reflexions, it is an evolution from the internal organ. बुद्धि चैतन्यप्रतिविम्बवैतन्य-दशनाथ अनुभवते। सूक्ष्मप्रवचनभाष्या, प. 73. 'The reflexion of intelligence into intellect is supposed with a view to account for the perception of intelligence.' It is meant, that the soul, when it has received the reflexion of an affection of the internal organ, to the end that it may behold itself possessed of that reflexion, must be reflected back into that organ, just as a man's face must be reflected into a mirror, in order that he may see himself. The reflexion into the internal organ must be reflected back into the soul; and this is the soul's self-inspection.

प्रभाणास्यश्च तत्त्वाद प्रकृतिपुष्पादिकं प्रमेयं बुद्धिसह पुरुषे प्रतिविम्बितं सद् मासते। इतिप, प. 76. 'Objects of right notion, namely, nature, soul, etc., are perceived, when borne by the affection known as instrument of right notion, and when, in conjunction with that affection, reflected in the soul.'

The notion 'I' is an affection of the internal organ; but the object of that notion is soul. for the affection 'I' is nothing but the soul reflected into the internal organ. Hence, the notions, or affections, of that organ, in the form 'I cognize', or 'I am happy', and so forth, mean, that the soul cognizes, or is happy, etc.

शब्दार्थादिनिश्चयापय परिणामस्य बुद्धि सिद्धचेतन तत्कारिणामिन्द्राक्षातिमुखः खाद्यसाक्षारादिनं बुद्धिविरुध्दखीक्षेत:।
Pātanjala-bhāṣya-vārttika, MS fol. 85, verso. 'That evolution
reflections, accounts itself, from ignorance, a willer and a doer; and, of course, it befalls it to experience happiness, misery, Elysium, Hell, birth, death, etc., the fruits of good and evil works. For, since the soul, though not actually a doer, misapprehendingly thinks itself one,

which is certitude about, i.e., cognition of, sound and other objects being established to belong to the intellect, its, that evolution's, effects, namely, will, activity, happiness, misery, desert, impression (sanskāra), etc., are established to be properties of the intellect solely.'

अहंदुरः कर्ती न पुर्वः || ९४ || अभिमानवृत्तिक-मन्तःकरणमहंदुरः स एव कृतियाः ! Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāshya, p. 226 'The egoizer, not the soul, is the agent.' That internal organ which has egoism for its characteristic affection is the egoizer. It alone is endowed with activity.'

The fifty-fourth aphorism of the Sāṅkhya-pravachana, Book VI, is included above.

Since the Sāṅkhya-s consider the internal organ to be the real agent, or doer of works, the virtue and vice arising from the works are supposed to be that organ's properties—or evolutions from it, as they are styled,—and not properties of the soul. Hence, in the penultimate passage of Sanskrit, desert is comprehended among the properties of the internal organ. Desert denotes both merit and demerit.

प्रकृति: कुष्टे कर्म शुभाशुभमहतमकम् ।
प्रकृतिन्थ तद्भावति तिषु लोकेषु कामगाः ॥

इति | Ibid., p. 35. 'Nature executes works, which have fruits, good and evil. Moreover, nature, ranging the three worlds at will, eats those works, in the fruit.'

Not nature itself, but nature in its evolution, the internal organ, is here spoken of as executing works and eating their fruit.
it is brought into the bondage of experiencing those fruits.\(^1\) This is what it is for the soul to be bound.

By the statement, that the soul, on admitting the reflexions of will, activity, and other qualities of intellect, misapprehendingly looks upon itself as an agent, etc., we are to understand it to be meant, that the soul does not really so look upon itself: for, as we have remarked, in the Sánkhya system, it has, in truth, no apprehension, both this and misapprehension being affections proper to the internal organ.\(^2\) The soul's being misapprehensive is nothing else but its receiving the reflexion of this misapprehension;\(^3\) an

\(^1\) अहं कर्त्तिकायविभिन्नस्यैः धर्मभास्मौत्पत्तिद्वारासर्विकल्पने-द्वैतवात्। Pátyajña-bhāṣya-varttika, MS fol 57, recto. 'For the egoistic notions, "I do", and the like, are, through their production of merit and demerit, the cause of the entire universe.'

It is meant, that, when a man thinks, 'I am a doer', he incurs vice or virtue from his doings. To the end that their fruit may be reaped, it is that the world is produced.

\(^2\) दुःखान्तमया धर्मः प्रकटस्ते तु नास्तमन:।

\(^3\) अयं चास्विवेकोक्तिच्छयः प्रतिविम्बाच्यना पुष्पधर्मं इव भवति। Sánkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, p. 214. 'And this
affection of intellect. In fact, neither does it at all misapprehend, nor does it at all apprehend.

On this topic the followers of the Sāńkhya allow themselves in singular theories, intelligible only at the cost of close attention. That the soul should be made out destitute of all specific qualities,\(^1\) such as apprehension, will, etc., is most material to their views; and hence they altogether refuse to it the possession of apprehension. Now, misapprehension itself is a species of apprehension, mistaken apprehension;\(^2\) as the taking nacre to be silver. Thus they are driven to regard both sorts of apprehension, the true and the false, as affections of the internal organ, or reflexions, in the soul, of those affections.

The precise mind of the advocates of the Sāńkhya, when they call activity an affection of the internal organ, and say, that only from misapprehension does the soul esteem itself an agent, will now become clear to the reader. As is the case with apprehension, will, and activity, so is it with happiness and misery. That is to say, they are all evolutions from the internal organ;\(^3\) and their reflexions in the soul are the soul’s non-discrimination, an affection of the internal organ, becomes, in the shape of reflexion, as it were a property of soul.'

\(^1\) अत आत्मा निगुणः | Ibid., p. 96. ‘Therefore the soul is without qualities.’

But compare what is said at the foot of page 39.

\(^2\) See the note at p. 15.

\(^3\) सुखदः खादिगुणाः चित्तर्मेवेदपि ततास्तितमि सिद्धः प्रतिक्रियायांस्वस्थितिरविवेकान् निमित्तात् | Sāńkhya-pravachana-bhāshya, p. 113. ‘Though the qualities, happiness,
becoming happy or miserable. Again, either a fresh affection of the internal organ, cognizing the soul, when happiness or misery is reflected therein, or the reflection, in the soul, of such an affection, is the misery, etc., are properties of the internal organ, "there", namely in the soul is their "residence", or abiding, in the form of reflexions, "owing to non-discrimination", as a cause.

The aphorism elucidated in the eleventh of the sixth Book.

Happiness, misery, merit, and demerit are all called evolutions from the internal organ; and the first two are likewise termed affections of that organ. All affections of the internal organ are held to be objects of consciousness. Cognition, will, activity, happiness, misery, and aversion, being objects of this sort, are affections; but merit, demerit, and impression, not being objects of consciousness, are not viewed as affections.

A distinction is groundlessly taken, by the Sāṅkhyaśas, between happiness and misery and the experience thereof. Happiness and misery, they say, reside in the internal organ; and the reflections of them, cast on the soul, are the soul's experience of them. Hence it is, that they called the soul the experiencer—of happiness and of misery, to wit. But that experience, since it is only a reflexion, and therefore an evolution from the internal organ, and not intrinsic to the soul, is considered to be false.

कृस्त्वतास्त्रऽचिद्गोष्टि धीदृः खप्रतिविव्वनम् ।
योधन्यो बन्धो भोगःषपः सोव्यैः चिदपणे मृषा ॥

इति । Sāṅkhya-sāra, MS fol. 30, recto. 'Another bondage is the reflection, in intelligence—immutable, unaffected, ether-like—of the intellect's misery; and it is the soul's experience of misery. This too is false in the mirror of intelligence, or soul.'

It is observable, that though the Sāṅkhyaśas distinguish between happiness and misery and the experience of them—taking the former to be affections of the internal organ, and
soul's cognizing itself as happy or miserable;¹ and in this consist all its bondage and wretchedness. To escape from this wretchedness, he who listens to the Sāṅkhya, and ponders and revolves it, and derives the latter to be reflections of those affections, lying on the soul—still they give to these latter as well, the name of happiness and misery.

¹ The reflexions, in the soul, of the internal organ's affections, happiness and misery, are the soul's happiness and misery. Then the soul, together with those reflexions, is reflected into the internal organ: and thus is constituted that organ's affection in the form of 'I am happy', or 'I am miserable'. Afterwards, the reflection of those reflexiform affections is cast upon the soul, and this is its physic apprehension of them: in other words, it is the soul's cognition, 'I am happy', or 'I am miserable'.

In order to account for the complex cognition, "I am happy", or the like, we believe, that the very affection of intellect takes on a similar form. Acknowledging that there is only the assimilation of the soul to that affection, namely by the soul's receiving its reflexion, we do not hold that there is, in the soul, any form but that of such affection received by the soul as a reflexion. For, if we held an independent form in the soul, it would follow, that it, the soul, is changeable.'

Compare what is said at p. 42, about the affection of the internal organ, in the form of 'I cognize the jar', and its reflexion in the soul.
from it this discriminative knowledge, that to do and
to experience are qualities of nature alone—for the
internal organ is an evolution of nature; and the soul
is in every way distinct from nature, and is, in reality,
neither doer nor experiencer of happiness or of
misery,¹ and is unchangeable—is released from the
captivity of nature. For it is a dogma of the Sānkhya,
that for shamefastness, nothing surpasses nature. So
long as soul does not detect her, she spreads her
toils; but, directly when her delusive play is noticed,
she flees, in confusion, from soul, and her face is
never beheld again.² Accordingly, when the soul has
acquired right apprehension, accumulated works, are,
by its efficacy, done away. And, inasmuch as it no

¹ See the passage from the Sānkhyā-sāra, given at p. 44.

² प्रकृते सुकृमातरं न किन्निदस्तीति में मतिभवति ।
या इश्वास्तोति पूनर्व दर्शन्मैति पुष्पस्य \\nइति। Sixty-first stanza of the Sānkhyā-kārikā. 'My opinion
is, that nothing is more coy than nature; which, on finding
herself beheld by the soul, does not again come in sight of
him.'

पुष्पण परिणामित्वः: खालकविपदेश्वनादि तावः
लखि-तात्त्विन् प्रकृते पूनर्व पुष्पं प्रत्युपस्पर्णं कुलवधुवत । Sānkhya-
pravāchana-bhāṣya, p. 154. 'Nature, also when her defects,
namely changeableness, the being filled with misery, etc., have
been observed by the soul, abashed, never again approaches
him; like as a woman of good family.'

Such is the description found of nature, though, in the con-
templation of the Sānkhya and Yoga systems, it is an insen-
tient principle.
longer deems itself a doer, its current works, or those which it does day by day, do not devolve upon it either merit or demerit. Only to exhaust the experience of fructescent works, has it to remain in its body; and, when these works shall have received their full requital, it will relinquish the body, and there will be no more fear, for it, of Elysium, or of Hell, or of metempsychosis. since then no works will appertain to it, the experience of which will oblige it to tenant a corporeal frame.

In connexion with this subject, what I have said above should be kept in remembrance; that, agreeably to the Sānkhya, neither apprehension nor misapprehension actually belongs to soul, both being qualities of the internal organ.\(^1\) Therefore, the cognition, ‘I am distinct from nature, and am unchangeable’, is an affection of the internal organ: and this organ is an evolution from nature. So it is to be understood, that, as nature, by means of its evolution, misapprehension, binds the soul, so no less, through its evolution, right apprehension, does it set the soul free. Hence nature is both the captivator and the emancipator of the soul.\(^2\) According to the Sānkhya doctors, the entire

\(^1\) इतिहासी च विवेकाविवेकों चित्रस्वेच्। | Ibid., p. 43.

‘And discrimination and non-discrimination, both which are affections, belong to the mind alone.’

The discrimination spoken of, that is to say, between soul and nature, is the right apprehension mentioned in the text, which is to be acquired before emancipation can be realized.

\(^2\) एवं यस्मै पुरोवयः प्रकृतिरविवेकेनात्रमां दर्शितवति
office of nature is to bring about the experience and the liberation of the soul.\(^1\) Nay, these authorities even declare, that, in truth, the soul is neither bound

\[\text{तद्रासनावशाल्} \text{ तमेव संयोगद्वारा वशाति नास्त्यस्।} \text{ तथा यस्मै} \text{ विवेकनास्त्वमानं दर्शितवती} \text{ तमेव सत्योगद्वारा मोचयति} \text{ तास्नोऽर्णेद्वादिति।} \text{ Ibid.} \]

Thus, to whatever soul nature shows itself, as not discriminated therefrom, that very soul, and no other, does it hold captive, through junction, by force of the impression of that non-discrimination. In like manner, to whatever soul it shows itself, as discriminated therefrom, that very soul it releases, through disjunction from itself, by the destruction of the impression aforesaid.

\[\text{थभावतो} \text{ दुःखध्वत विमुक्तस्य पुरुषस्य} \text{ प्रतिविविवधपुरुषस्य} \text{ दुःखमोक्षायं} \text{ प्रतिविविवधसमवन्धने} \text{ दुःखमोक्षायं} \text{ वा प्राधानस्य} \text{ जग्न्यानां त्वकर्त्तव्यम्।} \text{ अथवा} \text{ साधन सत्य पारमार्थिकते} \text{ दुःखमोक्षायंसत्यमिथ्यस्।} \text{ तत्वंपि} \text{ मोक्षसङ्गमेवोऽक्त।} \text{ Ibid., pp. 110-1.}\]

Nature’s fabricating the world is for the purpose of liberating the soul—naturally freed from the bondage of misery—from the misery which is in it, in the form of reflexions, or from that misery which is an affection of the internal organ, and is connected with the soul through the relation of reflexion. Or nature’s fabricating the world is for its own behoof, i.e. to deliver itself from veritable misery. Though the aim, in creation, is experience, as well as emancipation, the latter alone is specified, because it holds the chief place.

The first aphorism of the Sāṅkhya-pravachana, Book II, is here commented on. It is cited in short in the next extract.

By nature’s creation for itself we are to understand, that it creates inclusively for itself, while officially creating for soul.
nor freed, but that bondage and freedom both appertain to nature; as is distinctly set forth in the sixty-second stanza of the *Sāṅkhya-kārikā*.

The words subjoined make this evident: ननु विमलमोक्षार्थं सार्थं केवलेन सार्थार्थिपि सुत्रितक्षणितं चेत सन्यमं। तथापि पुरुषार्थतं विना सार्थार्थिपि न सिद्ध्वयति। सार्थोऽहि प्रवानस्य कृत्यमोक्षयवर्गितं पुरुषादात्मविमोक्षणमिति।

Ibid., p. 151. 'But, if it be said, that creation, by nature, is laid down—in the sentence, "For the liberation of the already liberated soul, or for itself"—to be for its own, i.e. for nature's sake also; it is admitted. Still, abstractedly from service of the soul, there cannot be nature's service of itself. For the good to be done for itself, by nature, is the deliverance of itself from the soul, whose experience and emancipation it has brought to effect.'

But how, it may be asked, does nature free the soul by forming the world? The ensuing extract will disclose the singular view which the advocates of the Sāṅkhya cherish on this point: लिङ्गसंस्कृतितो जनमद्वारा विबेकात्मकात्मकतस्मान मृत्तिक्य: पुरुषार्थीं सत्त्वायः।

Ibid., p. 138. 'By transmigration of the subtle body, through birth, is gained immediate discrimination. From this comes the soul's aim, emancipation. Such is the meaning.'

We are now enabled to see in what sense it is understood, that nature aims to liberate the soul by creating the world. In furnishing the soul with a body, mind, senses, etc., it capacitates the soul to obtain knowledge, which likewise it brings into existence; and by this knowledge the soul becomes unfettered.

1 तत्सामाः न बध्यसः न मुच्यते नाइषी संसरति कथितः। संसरति बध्यते मुच्यते च नानाश्रया प्रक्रियः।
Such are the chief doctrines of the Sānkhya and Yoga. But, as I have already remarked, there is this great distinction between these systems, that the latter recognizes God, while the former denies Him.¹

‘Therefore, in reality, not any soul is bound, or freed, or transmigrates: it is nature, in relation to various souls, that transmigrates, is bound, and is freed.’

प्रक्तरेव तत्त्वतो दूःखेन बन्धमोक्षः | Sānkhya-pravachana-bhāṣṭrya, p. 155. ‘Bondage and release belong to nature alone; because to it, in truth, belongs misery.’

Respecting the bondage of soul, the same author says: प्रतिविन्दुष्ठः खयोगस्तत्परमार्धिको भनव इति भावः | Ibid., p. 20. ‘The bondage of the soul, consisting in its connexion with misery, which is reflexional, is unreal. This is the import.’

¹ The ninety-second aphorism of the Sānkhya-pravachana, Book I. is इश्वरासिद्दः | ‘Since the being of Iśvara is not proved.’

आरम्भ: सर्गः प्रक्तवैव कृतो नेश्तरेण Tattva-kauumudi, p. 51. ‘“Commencement,” i.e. creation, is executed by nature exclusively, not by Iśvara.’

Long arguments are entered into by the commentators who wrote the Sānkhya-pravachana-bhāṣṭrya and the Tattva-kauumudi, to disprove God’s existence. At the same time, neither Vijñāna Bhikshu nor Vāchaspata Miśra was a thorough-going Sānkhya. This is shown as to the former, by the fact that he strives strenuously to excuse the one error, as he rates it, of the system he so largely endorses.

The Yoga, avowedly indeed, is theistic; but, on near scrutiny, we find this claim to be futile. The God of the Yoga differs in no respect, psychically, from its man or beast. His spirit is as incognizant as a clod; and his internal organ, which creates the world, and which is omniscient, and omnipotent, is
The Śāṅkhyas hold, that the Veda had no author. Yet they do not, like the Mīmāṃsakas, contend, that it has existed from eternity. They say, that, at the beginning of each renovation of the universe, it has issued from the mouth of Brahmā. He was no conscious composer of it, however: it simply escaped from him like an expiration. Thus the Śāṅkhyas, though maintaining that the Veda originated from Brahmā, would have it to be authorless. And they further declare, that, often as the universe has been redintegrated, the Veda has as often been produced without the least variation whatever, and thus has retained the same form from all duration of time.¹

an evolution from nature. In the matter of omnipresence—or, rather, all-pervadingness—he posses-ses it, indeed, but so does every other spirit, down to that of a tree.

रस्मेश्वरस्य सर्वज्ञार्धदिर्गवहरस्तु लोकन्यवहारादिति ।
Pātanjalī-bhāṣyavārtikā, MS fol. 87. recto. ‘As for the custom, in Yoga treatises, of saying, that the supremeĪśvāra is omniscient, etc., it is in compliance with popular usage.’

¹ न नित्यलं वेदानं कायेश्वरतः || ४५ || स तपोऽत्पत्त
तस्मात् तपस्तेपानात् बयो वेदा अजायन्तेवादि श्रुतेवेदानं न
नित्यार्मिन्यथः || Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, pp. 181-2.

‘‘The Vedas are not eternal, since there is scripture for their originatedness.’’ There being the scripture, ‘‘He, Brahmā, performed austerity, and from him, so doing, the three Vedas were produced’’, the Vedas are not from eternity. This is the sense.’

The forty-fifth aphorism of the Sāṅkhya-pravachana, Book V, is herein included.

Still the Śāṅkhyas do not acknowledge, that the Vedas were
Strange, indeed, are the tenets that have been enumerated. Great labour, as we see, has been expended for the one end of proving, that the soul must be regarded as devoid of apprehension, will, activity, composed by Brahmā. न पूज्यो करितामालेण पौर्णेयलं शास्त्राप्रशासनो: सुषुभिकालीनयो: पौर्णेयलंयवहारामाबायां किन्नु बुद्धिपूर्वकलोच्च वेदास्त मिश्रवदेवदश्यवणादबुद्धिपूर्वकाएव व्यम्पुत: समाशान खर्म भवन्ति । अतो न ते पौर्णेयाः । तथा च श्रुति: । तस्यितस्य महतो भूतस्य निश्चितमेतद् यद्येवं इत्यादिरिति। Ibid., pp. 182-3. ‘Not from the mere fact of its being uttered by a person, can one say there is producedness of a thing by that person; since it is not the wont to speak of the respiration of deep sleep as the production of a person: but, by reason of its production consciously, a thing is said to be produced by a person. The Vedas however, just like an expiration, and by virtue of desert of souls, issue, spontaneously, from Brahmā, without ever being consciously produced by him. Hence they are not productions of a person. And thus the scripture: “This, which is the Rig-veda, is the efflation of that great being.”’

The last extract, if fully given, would be seen to recite the other divisions of Veda, the Yajush, etc.

In proof of the assertion in the last sentence of the paragraph to which this note is attached, we read • वेदनित्यतावाक्यालि च समालीयानुपूर्विव प्रवाहानुष्ठेदपराणि | Ibid., p. 182. ‘And the texts of scripture declaratory of the eternalness of the Vedas signify, that the course of their uniform verbal collection has never been departed from at the times of the several renovations of the universe.’
happiness, misery, and all other qualities. For it is asked, if apprehension, will, and the like, be allowed to soul, and these qualities be proved natural to it, what is to transform its nature, and how will its liberation be effected? For, in all the systems, the absence of apprehension, will, etc., is held to be necessary to the state of emancipation; the dread of apprehension, will, etc., being such, that all manner of wretchedness is believed to ensue, where they subsist. To be released from misery is, of course, necessary to emancipation. Hence all the systematists, with a view to liberate the soul from every sort of wretchedness, aim at devising some scheme for its getting rid of apprehension, will, and the rest; and each of them frames a project after his own principles. As for the upholders of the Sāṅkhya, to their mind, nothing can be done, unless the soul be demonstrated to have been devoid of apprehension, will, and all other qualities, from all time.¹ We have seen what extraordinary

¹ बन्धोक्त दुःखोज एव। तस्य वन्धस्य पुष्पेः न सामाविकल्पं वक्ष्यमाणलक्षणमिति यतो न स्मोधतो बद्धस्य मोक्षाय साधनोपदेशस्य शौतस्य विधिनुष्ठानं नियोजयानां घटते न हाश्येः। सामाविकादौष्ण्यं मोक्षं सम्प्रवति! Ibid., pp. 14-5.

'Bondage, in this system, is connected with misery. This bondage is not natural to the soul, in the way about to be explained; since it cannot reasonably be supposed, that they who are directed can carry out, or perform, the instructions of the Veda regarding means for the emancipation of that which is naturally bound. For fire cannot be set free from the heat that is natural to it.'
things they have enunciated. It is a long way that they have wandered beyond the limits of common sense, after having once over-leapt them.

It is not the design of the Mīmāṃsā, as it is of the other Systems, to consider bondage and emancipation, and soul and what is not soul; but simply to

These words expound the seventh aphorism of the Sāṅkhya-pravachana, Book I.

What is meant by the term 'natural' will be made manifest by these words, which are put into the mouth of an objector:

नन् स्वाभाविकम्यायपपयो दददते | यथा शुक्पटस्य स्वाभाविकं शैकलयं रागेणासपन्नोयते | यथा च बीजस्य स्वाभाविकयं प्युर्सक्तिरिनासपन्नोयते |

Ibid., p. 16. 'But we see the elimination even of that which is natural. For instance, the natural whiteness of white cloth is removed by dyeing; or, again, the germinative power of a seed, though natural, is destroyed by fire.'

As whiteness, a quality of white cloth, is here said to be natural to such cloth; so, if cognition, will, happiness, misery, etc., were supposed to be qualities of the soul—as the Naiyāyikas assert they are—they would be called natural to it, in the terminology of the Sāṅkhya. On this point the Sāṅkhya assail the Naiyāyikas; as might be shown by adduction of texts, if it were necessary to adduce them.

Just as, in complete liberation, there must be dismissal of misery, so must there be of cognition likewise; it being itself a misery, and compounded of the three gunas. See the note at p. 17; and a passage cited at p. 39, which implies that, if cognition were reckoned a quality of the soul; a loss would be sustained in liberation—when it must be parted with—and liberation would be no supreme aim of the soul. Will and other qualities obey the same law as cognition. See, further, what is said at p. 25, on the notion of liberation common to all the Systems.
treat of the precepts of the Veda, and of its cultus: and I do not purpose to examine it as touching these heads. Its points which are here especially deserving of mention are as follows. First, it repudiates the idea of God; and, in the second place, it contends, that the Veda was originated by no one, but has always existed. The injunctions, inhibitions, and good and evil fruits of works rehearsed in it, are held, indeed, to be true. But the accounts of the divinities, given in the Veda, are reputed to be false, and to

\[1\] अतः कथमपि न विग्रहादिर्दौकारः किन्तु श्राद्धमालं
दैवता। अर्थस्तु प्रातिपदिकानुरोधाच् चेतनोस्वेतनो या केशिन खोक्तिन्ते न तु विग्रहादिसत्। उपासनादी परं व्यासमाल- माहायं तत्त्वेति जैमिनिमतसन्निष्टः। सम लेवं बदलोद्वैपि वाणी

dुष्यतिथि तत्त हृत्समरणमेव शरणम्। Bhātta-dipikā, MS ninth chapter, second quarter, topic of Devatā. 'Therefore it is not, by any means, to be acknowledged, that a god is an embodied form, and so forth; but he is to be regarded as a mere verbal expression of the Veda. As for the thing signified by that expression, it is held to be according to the expression, some sentient being, or insentient object—not endowed, however, with a figure, etc., i.e. purely notional. But, in devotion and so forth, mere meditation on him, in picturing to oneself the unreal as real, is to be observed. Such is the gist of the doctrine of Jaimini, here considered. But, by the very repetition of this blasphemy, my tongue contracts detilement—from which the remembrance of Hari is the only safeguard.'

The functions discharged by a god, in virtue of his possessing 'an embodied form and so forth', are indicated as follows:

दैवता विग्रहावती प्रतिगृह्य मुक्त्वा तृप्ति प्रसीदिति च ।
have been written solely for the purpose of magnifying works. With regard to this matter, the surprising notions about to be noted are professed. It is recorded, in the Veda, that Elysium is obtained by sacrifice. And a sacrificial observance consists in offering, in fire, clarified butter, flesh, etc., to Indra, Varuṇa, Agni, and other divinities; with the recitation and intonation of hymns of praise from the Veda, and laudation of the exploits and virtues of the aforesaid divinities. Now, the Mīmāṃsakas, assert, that Indra and those other divinities have no existence whatever, and that the prowess ascribed to them is entirely fictitious. Nevertheless, there is such a wonderful potency in the falling of offerings into the fire, in their name, after the manner prescribed by the Veda, and in uttering the syllables of the songs that hymn them, as to ensure attainment of the celestial abodes.

The Naiyāyikas and Vaiśeṣikas hold, for their foremost doctrines, as follows.¹ They believe in a God, Śāstra-dīpikā; the manuscript not at hand for reference. 'A god, incorporate, accepting and consuming a sacrifice, is satisfied and becomes auspicious.'

Consonantly to the Mīmāṃsā theory, works are instinct with an inherent potency for desert; and, though the devotee may be convinced, that the gods are purely chimerical, Mīmāṃsakas believe, that he derives virtue, as it were magically, from adoring them.

¹ Almost all the statements of this paragraph may be verified by a heedful perusal of the Bhāshā-parichchheda. It has been translated into English by Dr. Roer, in the ninth volume of the Bibliotheca Indica. The reader may profitably compare with it Dr. J. R. Ballantyne's translation of the Tarkasangraha, as far as it goes. But both these works must be used critically.
described as one, eternal, immutable, without form, pervading everything, all-powerful, omniscient, framer of the universe, lord of all, and bestower of the consequences of the good and evil works of souls, which souls have always existed. In order towards this bestowal, He fashions the world out of its material cause, and preserves the world, governs it, and brings it to a termination. The followers of the two systems just named maintain, that some of the constituents of the world had no beginning, and that others among them had. Of the former category are the originary atoms of earth, water, fire, and air, as well as other, time, space, mind, and soul. An atom is the minutest portion of earth, or the like; invisible to the eye, intangible to the hand, in short, inappreciable by any of the senses; and it is incapable of further division. It is supposed to have existed, spontaneously, from eternity. From the aggregation of atoms results whatever is visible, tangible, etc., earth and water, for example; and hence such things had a beginning, and are also liable to destruction. To souls belong apprehension, will, activity, happiness, misery, virtue, vice, and other qualities; and they are eternal and innumerable, and distinct from the body, the senses, and the mind. Further, they are all-pervading. It is only so much of the soul as dwells in the body, that can see, hear, apprehend, will, etc.; and yet the psychical essence is not limited by the body, but is diffused everywhere.1 Moreover, like the other Systematists,

1 No one of the Six Systems entertains correct ideas of spiritual substance. Material properties are attributed to it by
the Naiyāyikas and Vaiśeshikas allege, that the soul misapprehensively identifies with the body, etc., and that, consequently, to it all wretchedness adheres, and that solely through right apprehension can it escape therefrom, and attain emancipation. In the two systems under notice, the Veda is believed to have God for its author.

Such are the distinctive doctrines of the several Systems, the Vedānta excepted, which possess the greatest importance. There are many distinctive doctrines, in them, of lesser moment, which demand no mention on the present occasion.

Now, any man of the least discrimination, if he has not girded his loins pertinaciously to withstand the truth, can readily discern, that, since these systems disagree among themselves, they cannot all be true. When one man calls a thing black, and another man calls it white, it is clear, that one or other of them is in the wrong. There are some people who labour hard to make out, that there is no discordancy among the Six Systems. Let them only look into the fundamental aphorisms of those systems, and they will see, that the views laid down in one set are, in another set, repeatedly brought forward and refuted. Ś'ankara A'chārya and others even go the length of reviling those who deviate from themselves in doctrine. For all of them. For instance, they ascribe dimension to the soul; and they further speak of it as actually touching matter. Again, though they hold the soul to be indiscernible, they use such language as that, though diffused everywhere, it is in contact with a jar in the place where the jar is, and no elsewhere.
instance, Ś'ankara stigmatizes a Naiyāyika as a bull, sans horns and tail.¹

¹ In his commentary on the Brhad Aranyaka Upanishad.

Vijnāna Bhikshu writes thus, of the Vedāntins. आधुनिकानां
बेदान्तिज्ञानं प्रप्रभास्तत्त्वलं अपसिद्धान्ता नान्तिकमेतनु-
सारिगो ममक्तमिर्तं: परिहारयः | Pāṇaṭjala-bhāshya-
vāntikā, MS fol. 80 verso. 'The false doctrines of the modern
Vedāntins, so self-styled, maintaining that the world is unreal,
as being in accord with the views of the infidels, should be
avoided afar by aspirants after emancipation.'

Vijnāna, who lived centuries ago, meant, by 'modern
Vedāntins, so self-styled', Ś'ankara A'chārya and his school.
These he looked upon as innovators with respect to the
Vedānta notions he himself professed; which, a right or amiss,
he considered as much more ancient, and as alone genuine.

The same writer again says: किञ्चनि मध्याप्रदानीसत्तकतेत्यन्-
शासनाद्धर्मीद्धु स्तापवन मिथ्याद्वयो बौद्धप्रमेया एव ।
सांप्रदतित्तिकशंदेन प्रप्रभास्तत्वलायकत्याथ तैर्युपागमात् ।
Sānkhyā-pravachana-bhāshya, p. 107. 'For the rest, by the
canon, "The idea of the falsity of all infidelity", they who
account virtue, etc., to be false, like a dream, are, verily,
a sect of Baudhāyas. For these also, by the term "illusory",
argue the world to be sprung from nescience.'

Vijnāna Bhikshu says, at p. 23 of the Sānkhyā-pravachana-
bhāshya: सांप्रदतित्तिकश्वयम यवधातानात्या Sāmozatti is,
then, equivalent to avidyāka; and this scarcely differs in import
from māyika. 'Illusory', though an experimental rendering,
may, therefore, be allowed.

It is the Amara-kosa which Vijnāna here quotes from.
Ś'ankara A'chārya, moreover, owns, that the founders of the
Pray, is this a token of unanimity? Even without separate consideration of the tenets of the several systems, it becomes manifest, that they contain errors, and, by consequence, that their authors, the Rishis, like ourselves, were not infallible. When, however, each of these systems is examined by itself, as concerns its dogmas, these conclusions are rendered indubitable.

Philosophies were not at unity among themselves: प्रसिद्धमा-हास्याभिमतानामसिप तीर्थकराणां कपिलकण्मुक्त्रभूवतीनां परस्परंत्रिपतिपित्रिदर्शिनात्। 'For mutual opposition is seen between Kapila, Kanabhuks, and other authors of systems, whose greatness is conceded to be notorious.'

This passage, which occurs in Śāṅkara's commentary on the Brahma-sūtra, is cited by the Reverend Professor Banerjea, in his valuable Dialogues on Hindu Philosophy, p. 18.

Very different, in their sentiments, were the Hindu philosophical writers of bygone days from those of recent times, with their nugatory endeavours to reconcile the irreconcilable.
CHAPTER III

An Examination of the Sāṅkhya Doctrines (1) of the Non-existence of God, as concurrent with the Belief in Virtue, Vice, and their Fruits; and (2) of the Acceptance of the Veda as having had no Conscious Author, and as being irrecusably authoritative.

How great is the error of the Sāṅkhya in denying the existence of God! On all sides of us, in this Cosmos, countless and manifest are the tokens, from which it is certain, that some most mighty and ineffable Intelligence framed the world with design.\(^1\) Any effort directed to an end has, self-evidently, mind for its author; for only he who knows that a particular end will be accomplished by a given act, will engage in such an act with a view to such an end. We are, therefore, sure, that he who does this act possesses consciousness; and such a one is called an intelligent

\(^1\) The dominant argument urged, in defence of the existence of God, by the theistical schools of Hindu philosophy, is, that the earth, the sprout, etc., must be referred to an agent, inasmuch as they are effects; according to the maxim, that ‘every effect implies an agent, as a jar, for instance’. Those schools, and likewise the generality of Hindus, are, however, but little conversant with the theological argument, the subject of a portion of the present chapter.
being. Now, when, after contemplating a thing, we are certified that it is intended for a certain end, there is no room for doubt that an intelligent being has had to do with it. To give an example: I find, somewhere, a pile of wood sufficient to cook a meal for four men, and as much as they would require of pulse, rice, meal, ghee, vegetables, and so forth, disposed in separate vessels, and a fire-place, and the ground clean round about. Would any sceptic, I demand, in all the earth, doubt whether the requisites aforesaid were prepared by some one for culinary purposes, or whether they collected together spontaneously and fortuitously? Just so is it with a clock. No one, on examining the arrangement of its wheels, will ever entertain a misgiving as to whether it was made by some one, and in order to measure time. Similarly, I maintain, that this world is full of innumerable things, analogous in character to those above mentioned, on scrutinizing which it becomes certain, that they were made for such and such ends.

And here it is to be noticed, that, as regards a single thing—that is, not an aggregate made up of many and heterogeneous parts, jointly indicating a distinct final cause—though it be capable of producing a certain end, still the doubt may arise concerning it, whether that end was contemplated, or whether it be governed by pure chance. For instance, I come upon one or two sticks. They may serve for cooking; and yet I do not know, for certain, whether they were meant for that purpose. It may be, that they dropped accidentally from off somebody's head. As they would answer for cooking, so they would answer
for other ends as well. I might drive off a dog with them; or I might turn them to account as stakes. No one can say, with perfect positiveness, for what particular end, out of these and others, those sticks were designed. But, when I see together a fagot, and water, and pulse, and meal, etc., no hesitation possesses me, but certainty, that those appliances are for cooking. And the ground of this certainty is, that each of them bears a share in cooking: and it is out of question, that all those heterogeneous articles, concurring to one end, could never have come together casually, each in its due measure and appropriate place, but must have been assembled by an intelligent being, and with design. Now, there are in this world unnumbered things which, not being single and in-composite, accomplish fixed ends. Had they been isolated, it would have been hard to say whether their ends were not the result of mere chance. But these things are compounded of numerous constituents, gross and subtile; each of which is necessary, in its proportion, to bring about the end, and is also of due dimension, is adjusted to a fit position, and is constituted of proper material: as, in a watch, the parts that should be made of iron are of iron; and it is similar as to those that should be of brass, of porcelain, and of glass.

Although there are many wonderful things in this world, which we of India did not heretofore thoroughly understand, yet the learned of Europe, with their subtile ingenuity, deep investigation, persistent industry, and the help of various instruments, have so explored the fabric of the body and of vegetable products, the
earth, celestial system, and the nature, varieties, and properties of water, air, light, etc., that he who reads the books written by those men, gains an almost supernatural faculty of vision, and beholds on every hand innumerable evidences of the inscrutable power and exquisite skill of God. Even in the human eye we perceive an amazing and indescribable workmanship. Between the structure of the eye and that of the telescope there is some resemblance; only that the telescope is far inferior to the eye in nicety. Opticians have demonstrated, that everything seen by the eye must have its image reflected on the retina; and, with a view to this end, the skill which the eye reveals in its formation is such as to strike the mind with astonishment. Part of the eye consists of lenses, and these are so disposed, and are made of such substance, as that the desired end should be accomplished. Again, the eye has several internal departments; and so minute are some of them, as to be invisible, save with the assistance of the microscope. But all these constituent portions are constructed, and adjusted, and proportioned, agreeably to a fixed rule. As for the marvellous contrivances of the eye, adapted for looking at objects distant and near, and as the light is more or less; and the peculiar conformation of that organ in birds, fishes, and other animals, fitted to enable them to see objects according to their several circumstances; and many other particulars relating to the eye; if I were to treat of these topics exhaustively, I should be compelled to devote a large book to them. And now I would ask, if, on seeing preparations for cooking, or on inspecting a watch, we
have no doubt of there being an agent in connexion with them, why should we harbour doubt, after looking upon natural objects such as have been spoken of, that they had a Maker? For, the same reasons that conclude an agent in the former case, present themselves in the latter. If any one says, that, in the alleged instance of culinary ingredients, he has assurance of an agent, whereas he has none as regards the Maker of the world, I reply, that the reason is simply this, because of pride, he dislikes that the existence of God should be proved; and, consequently, he does not earnestly apply his mind to deliberate on the subject, and so he arrives at no conviction of the truth.

Some men, too indolent to think, rashly argue as follows: ¹ With respect to cooking materials, and with respect to a watch, and so forth, we acknowledge an agent, on the ground that we have seen people making watches: but we have never seen any one making the world: and therefore we do not own that it has a Maker. My reply is: Let a man of this country never have seen any one making a watch, and let it be, that no one here could make one: Nevertheless, if a watch were to be shown to him, and if he were to reflect on the arrangement of all its parts, and on the

¹ What is objected in this and the next paragraph may be thought almost too frivolous to merit refutation. At the same time, it correctly represents the crudities which one daily hears from the lips of young Hindus who have acquired a smattering of English, and have learnt, that there has been a single white man, ‘one Hume’, who rejected Christianity. The North-Western Provinces and the West of India are here especially referred to.
end of each, would he not confess it to be the mechanism of some very ingenious artificer? Know, that the reason for acknowledging an agent is not the seeing one engaged in action, but, what I have stated before, namely, the perceiving that so many things, in due quantities and in fitting positions, have been collected together, every one of which, in its proportion, is indispensably to a certain end. For reason teaches, that it is impossible they could have been got together so systematically, but for the intervention of an intelligent agent.

The word 'nature',¹ with some unthinking people, is regarded as so potent a charm, that the bare utterance of it is sufficient to dissipate every doubt. It is because of nature, they say, that a human body arises from human seed, as wheat grows from wheat. To such persons I address a question: This 'nature' not being an intelligent thing, endowed with understanding, will, and other qualities, how can it effect that in which tokens of the operation of understanding and design are distinctly manifest? Those who talk thus about nature plainly give proof, that they have not caught sight of the strong point of my argument, which is in this, that, on examining a body, or other similar thing, it clearly appears, that it was made for certain ends, and that it exhibits, as contributing thereto, an adjustment indicative of great skill and forethought. Further, it is indubitable that, to devise anything for an end, and to construct it

¹ This is not the Sānkhyā 'nature', prakṛti, but our own polysemantic 'nature', so very imperfectly apprehended by the sciolists spoken of in the last note.
after an exact consideration of many components befitting it, is impossible but to an intelligent being. An intelligent Maker is, therefore, established. And how can this be refuted by speaking of nature? Can nature resolve on a particular act, and is it conscious that, by doing so and so, a certain end will be brought about? If it can do thus, it is proved to be God; and then I and my opponent differ only about names. If, on the other hand, it cannot do so, but is a thing inanimate and devoid of understanding, it cannot produce the effects which my opponent attributes to it. For, if he reflects a little closely, he will see, that, though we may allow air to possess the nature of raising dust from one spot and depositing it in another, yet it would never enter the mind, that the air should of itself rear a sumptuous house, or that fire should of itself cook pulse, bread, and vegetables.

Now, observe the extraordinary position of the Sāṅkhyas. They allege, that nature, for the sake of soul, engages in various works; and, by way of proving this point, they adduce the example of milk, which, though inanimate, with a view to the sustenance of the calf, secretes itself, they say, in the udder of the cow. But this is bringing forward one thing

\[\text{Tattva-kaumudi, p. 52. 'An insentient thing also is seen acting for an end. For example, insentient milk exerts itself for the nurture of the calf.'}\]

Vāchaspāti Miśra thus writes in his annotations on the fifty-seventh couplet of the Sāṅkhya-kārikā.
insusceptible of proof in order to ratify another thing of the same character. For, as I have before shown, the doing anything for an end can be predicated of none but an intelligent being. When a man hardens his heart, and determines to uphold atheism, how blind he grows! The Sānkhyas, for instance, have converted into instruments for disproving the existence of God, that very thing which is an irrefrangible testimony to the contrary. For the fact of milk, being produced in the cow’s udder for the sake of the calf, and countless other such things, go to prove, that God exists, and that all these are His works; but the Sānkhyas use them to prove, that the whole world, every constituent part of which is for an end, has for its author that which possesses no sentience—nature.

Again, a most egregious error of the Sānkhyas is seen in this, that, although they deny God, yet they believe in virtue, vice, and their fruits, and impose upon men’s shoulders the yoke of multifarious ceremonies, repetition of sacred words, austerities, meditation, etc. One would indeed suppose that God must be the root, and the chief and first thing, in all religions. Except for God, who is there to enact commands and prohibitions? And how can there be an Elysium, or a Hell? For who is there to award the

1 स्यककर्म स्याश्रमविहितकृत्यान्वतान्म् | Thirty-fifth aphorism of the Sānkhya-pravachana, Book III; in the Sānkhya-pravachana-bhāshya, p. 142. ‘One’s duty is performance of the works enjoined for one’s stage of life’.

See the note at p. 21.
need of good works, or the penalty of evil? The truth is, that all the originators of Śāstras, in this country, mistake in common in this, that, while dwelling on the consideration of virtue and vice, and their issues, they have forgotten, that the good and evil requital of virtue and vice is in this wise alone:—God has enjoined virtue, and forbidden vice; and hence, being pleased with the obedient, He confers happiness upon them, and, by reason of His equity, visits punishment upon such as disobey His laws. Oblivious of this, the authors of the systems by degrees came to regard works, like seed, for instance, as possessing a natural power of bringing forth fruit. This error is not so patent in the Naiyāyikas and some others; but it is most conspicuous in the Sānkhyā and Mīmāṃsā schemes, which even go the length of inculcating, that works can, of themselves, account for the production of the universe, and that there is, therefore, no need of supposing an intelligent Author of it.' To this momentous defect I shall return in the sequel.

1 Vijnāna Bhaṭṭa thus introduces the second aphorism of the Sānkhyā-pravacana, Book V.: 

That which was asserted, viz., that Īśvara cannot be proved to exist, will not stand; since he is proved to exist, by the fact, that there must be a giver of the fruit of works. They who object as above are refuted in what follows.'

The aphorism pointed to is thus elucidated:

\[\text{Iśvagonyaḥ}\]
How strange, once more, is the view of the Sāṅkhya's concerning the Veda! At the beginning of each universal renovation, it is emitted, they say, from the mouth of Brahmā. But he is not its composer; for he does not consciously frame it; it only proceeds from his throat, like an expiration. Against this I have to say, that no book can be originated that is not made knowingly. In establishing the existence of God, I have said, that, on seeing materials for cooking we are clear, that all the various articles are for the end of cooking; and it is, further, certain, that they were accumulated by some one. Just so, on observing, in a book, the apt arrangement of its sentences, words, and letters, and its orderly construction, it becomes certain, that this arrangement and this construction have, for their end, the expression of certain ideas, and hence, that some one wittingly assembled, as we find them, the letters, words, and sentences adverted to. For they unquestionably betoken a desire to give expression to certain ideas. But it is manifest, that this desire, and the collocation in fitting order, with a view to such expression, are not the work of inert elements of language; since none but a conscious

"The Sāṅkhya Doctrines" 107

...
agent could design, and no other could determine, such an arrangement as I have spoken of. If the Veda was not devised by a conscious agent, how can it lay down injunctions and prohibitions? And how can it inform us touching the fruit of good and evil works? Even a child can understand, that, to give an order, or to notify a fact, implies mind, and not that which is destitute of it. Therefore, for letters, words, and sentences, things insentient, to come together of their own accord, and to command, or the like, is impossible.
CHAPTER IV

"Examination of the Sāṅkhya Dogma, that Nature is the Material Cause of the World"

The Sāṅkhya doctrine of nature likewise seems to me altogether unreasonable. Preferable, by much, is the doctrine of atoms maintained in the Nyāya and the Vaiseshika. I do not mean, that these systems are right in arguing, that the world is composed of eternal atoms for I do not hold that anything, God excepted, is eternal; and I do hold, that, quite irrelatively to any material cause, God created all things by His inscrutable might. What I here intend is, that, if one does not accept the belief, that the world was originated without a material cause, there is, to my thinking, no view left for him, more congruous with reason, than that which deduces the world from atoms. But what argument or reason is there for the proof of nature, and the great principle, and the organ of self-consciousness, etc.? The Sāṅkhyas assert, that happiness, misery, and insensibility inhere in everything¹ in the universe; and that, therefore, one

¹ घटश्च्यमतास्यमुद्ध छोटाः सन्नाशुभमित्यादिप्रयथानि
द्विप विषये सुखायुतिम्। Sāṅkhya-sāra, MS fol. 11, recto.
is constrained to believe the material cause of the world to be that which possesses those qualities. And such is nature. But this is not correct, for happiness,

'Since, in like manner as we are wont to speak of jar-colour so, also, we are wont to speak of woman-pleasure, sandal-pleasure, etc., it is proper to suppose, that pleasure and the like *where* in objects.'

Vijñāna is here a victim to phraseology on which, plainly enough, he did not reflect with sufficient attention. For 'jar-colour' means 'the colour of a jar'; whereas 'sandal-pleasure' means 'the pleasure derived from the use of sandal'. Such fallacies are far from uncommon among the pundits.

The English rendering of the Sanskrit is just a trifle *ad
synesm*.

सुखादिकं च घटादेविपि भजातिदेव धर्मोऽकनो-पादानलादन्यकार्याः पितायतः गीतं* । Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, p. 88. 'And it has been said, that happiness and so forth just like colour, etc., are properties of a jar and the like also; since the internal organ, *which has happiness, misery, etc., for properties, is the material cause of all other effects.'

¹ कार्यं हि कारणमुष्ठिकं दृष्टं यथा तत्वादिगुणात्मकं पठादि । तथा महदादिलक्षणोनांपि कार्यं सुखदः:कमोहस्पष्टेण स्नकारणगतसुखदः:कमोहस्तहः: भविष्यम् । तथा च तत्कारण सुखदः:कमोहस्तहः: प्रवाहपर्यंतं सिद्धं भवति । Tatvā-kaumudi, p. 24. 'An effect is seen to be made up of the qualities of its cause. For instance, cloth and the like are made up of *their* qualities, thread, etc. In like sort, also such an effect as the great *principle*, i.e. *intellect*, composed of happiness, misery, and insensibility, should be *considered as* made up of happiness, misery, and insensibility, appurtenances of its cause. And thus a cause made up of happiness, misery,
misery, and insensibility do not inhere in external things, but are qualities of an intelligent being, and reside in it alone: As I shall prove presently. The truth is, that external objects may become the cause, to an intelligent being, of happiness, misery, and so forth; as fire, on being touched, produces pain. Fire is not, however, the site of pain, but only the cause thereof, to him who touches it. It is a surprising error of the Sāṇkhyaśas, that they assign to the outward material world such things as apprehension, will, happiness, misery, and so forth—which are qualities of the soul, and reside in it alone, and have no independent existence—and further allege, that, as is the world, so must be its material cause, namely, nature. In this way they make the soul to be insentient, and

and insensibility, namely, nature, the unmanifested, is established for them, viz. for intellect, etc.'

Vāchaspāti Miśra's language, throughout this passage, is somewhat lax. To exemplify: Instead of saying, that an effect is made up of the qualities of its cause, he ought, in strictness of Hindu terminology, to have said, that an effect is beholden, for its own qualities, to those of its cause. So, again, it is a loose mode of expression, to speak of nature as being made up of happiness, misery, and insensibility; since these, in philosophical rigour, are laid down as constituting nature's qualities, or properties. This latter assertion is shown

by what follows: सुखाद्यामकता तु गुणाना मनस: सहस्यानमांकतावत धर्माक्ष्य्येदादेववोपपयते। Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāṣṭya, pp. 88-9. 'As for the phraseology, that the gunas, or components of nature, are made up of happiness, etc., it is accountable for only by the identity, under one aspect, of a property and that which is propertied; as we hear it said, that mind is one with resolve.'
the world and its material cause to be intelligent. And while they make the latter to be intelligent, they say, that nature, the great principle, and so on, are nothing but insentient substances. Such strange entities as these can never be established by any ratiocination.

Let the terms prakṛti, sattva, rajas, tamas, buddhi, and ahaṅkāra be taken otherwise than as they are taken in the Sāńkhya, and the result will be very different. Goodness, passion, and darkness, a Naiyāyika might argue, may be conditions of soul, and therefore may be alleged, to belong to its nature: For 'nature,' in such a sense, or svabhāva, is one of the classical acceptations of the multivocal prakṛti. When the apprehensive faculties of the soul are in their full vigour, and when the soul is calm and unperturbed, it may be said to be in a state of goodness; when agitated, and greatly drawn towards external objects, we may speak of it as being in a state of passion; and, when it is stupefied, one may call it dark. Again, intellect is a quality of soul; and to soul appertains egoism also. If we understand, in some such way, the words selected, in the Sāńkhya as funda-

1 सर्व एव प्रवाहन्वुद्द्राद्योऽचेतना: | Tattva-kaumudi, p. 20.

'The whole, nature, intellect, and so on, are insentient.'

2 The words goodness, passion, and darkness, with their conjugates, as here employed, and elsewhere, must be understood to be technical, and as inexpressive substitutes, at best, for the sattva, rajas, tamas, etc., of the Sanskrit.

3 In the Sāńkhya, buddhi, intellect, is the organ of cognition; ahaṅkāra, that of egoism: but, in this place, the Nyāya view is adopted, that is to say, that intellect itself is cognition, and that ahaṅkāra itself is egoism.
mental technicalities, the things denoted by them can be proved to have existence; but not otherwise.

I am unable to say, with certainty, how the Sāṅkhya system came to entertain such strange ideas on the subject under discussion. Nevertheless, considering the intellectual peculiarities of the pūndits, and their method of argumentation, I hazard this conjecture. There is no question, that the atheistic Sāṅkhya system was not primeval in India; for, though the Manusmṛti, the Gītā, and other books, in describing the generation of the world, etc., countenance the tenets of the Sāṅkhya, yet God likewise is there acknowledged to be the Author of the world. Hence, it seems to me, that the theistic Sāṅkhya was first elaborated, and the atheistic, by little and little, at an after-period. The germ of the former may have been as follows. It is written in the Veda, with reference to God, that, at the time the world was made, 'He saw,' and that he said, 'I am one: I would become many.' By these words, perception and self-consciousness are implied to have arisen, in God, at the beginning of the universe: and perception is intellect; and the notion denoted by 'I' is egoism. From this the ancients may have concluded, that God, in order to the construction of the world, assumed intellect and egoism;\(^1\) and thus they may have been induced to

---

\(^1\) This conjecture proves to be corroborated by the ensuing words of Vijnāna Bhikṣu: श्रुतावपि स ईश्वरके तदैवक्षेत्रादि संगीत्यत्वबुद्धित एव तद्विरिजितसुभ्रिगमिते | Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, p. 50. 'Also in the Veda, by the texts,
regard His intellect and egoism as the causes of the world. One will here ask: Though they thus accounted intellect and egoism the causes of the world, still these are only its instrumental causes; and why do you suppose that they are held, in the Sānkhya, to be material causes? The answer is, that the pundits have come, in process of time, to forget the true character of several things which they have been accustomed to treat about. Thus, in many cases, as concerns qualities, which are inseparable from things qualified, they have brought themselves to think of them as independent things possessing qualities. The founders of the Sānkhya system, having long been used to call intellect and egoism the instrumental causes of the world, passed on to view them as independent objects, and have ended in making them the material causes of the world. In attributing to qualities the nature of independent objects, nay, in ascribing to them personality, the Hindus, in other

'He beheld', 'He saw', etc., we learn, that, from intellect itself, produced at the outset of creation, was the creation of all besides itself.'

अत चार्यमनुकूलस्तिर्: | बहु स्यां र्रजायेवयादिद्रुति-
सःतिम्यस्तावद् भूतादिशष्ठ्यिर्मिमानपूर्वकावद् वुद्धिःतिपूर्वकुष्ट्री
कारणत्यािर्मिमान: सिद्ध: | Ibid, p. 49. 'And this is an
expedient argument on this behalf. Since, in passages of the
Veda and of the Smṛitis, such as "May I become many", "May
'I be produced", etc., it is set forth, that the creation of the
elements and the like is preceded by egoism as a cause, egoism
is made out to be the immediate cause of the creation, which
creation has an affection of intellect for its mediate cause.'
instances as well, are seen to go amiss. For example, we find, in the Purānas and other books, accounts of the generation of love, wrath, serenity, content, and such like qualities, taken by themselves, and stories of their nuptials and so forth. The general error here animadverted on is not, however, peculiar to the Hindus. The old inhabitants of other countries than India were not clear of it. In the second and following centuries of the Christian era, Valentinus, Basilides, and other heretics, as is evidenced by their writings, made intellect, will, and other qualities to possess personality; and they regarded them as makers of the world. The progress in error of the Sāṅkhyaš was, it appears to me, somewhat similar to that of the Gnostics. It is evident, that, when the people of former ages had quite forgotten the reason which first led them to account intellect and egoism to be the causes of the world, and began to consider them as, in another way, the causes of the world, they likewise changed their ideas of the things denoted by the terms intellect and egoism, began to look upon them as organs of cognition and egoism, respectively, and as unintelligent substances, and, imagining a subtle source from which intellect could be evolved, gave that source the appellation of nature. Their reason for making nature to consist of goodness, passion, and darkness, was, perhaps, that intellect is sometimes in a state of goodness, sometimes in a state of passion, and sometimes in a state of darkness; and hence its cause, nature, must be constituted of three ingredients. When, subsequently, they saw, that the whole world might be derived from this nature, they concluded,
that there was no need of a God. It is thus, on conjecture, that the more recent Sānkhya system sprang up; the doctrines of which, on all points, have, it may be, gradually undergone so much of alteration, that there is now not a vestige of similarity between it and the scheme from which it descended.
CHAPTER V

Examination of the Sānkhya Dogma, that Apprehension, Will, Activity, Happiness, Misery, and other Qualities, do not appertain to the Soul.

To deny that cognition, will, activity, happiness, and misery are qualities of the soul, and to hold them to be affections of the internal organ, is utterly at issue with reason.¹ I maintain, that apprehending, willing, doing, etc., are qualities of intelligence. That in which these qualities reside is called an intelligent being; and the same is a soul. The Sānkhya may reply, that, in his nomenclature, that is called a soul,

¹ The Sānkhyas repudiate virtue and vice, withal, as attributes of the soul, and style them qualities of the internal organ. Vijnāna Bhikshu, as appears from an extract previously adduced, denounces the Vedāntins as Baudhās, for their doctrine, that everything is unreal, virtue and vice included. See the citation from the Sānkhya-pravachana-bhāshya, at the foot of p. 52. But are not the Sānkhyas obnoxious to a similar reproach, for denying, that virtue and vice belong to the soul?

It may assist the reader, if he is told, that, in order fully to take in the present chapter, he should give a well-weighed consideration to the conspectus of the Sānkhya system contained in Chapter ii, and to the passages appended in the foot-notes.
which is unendowed with apprehension and other qualities. My answer is, that such a soul cannot, in any wise, be proved to have existence,¹ or to be such a one as I have, or as he has. For it is beyond doubt, that we both apprehend, and will, and energize, and become happy and miserable; that is, we have the qualities apprehension, will, activity, etc. Nor can our consciousness of these things be illusive:² for there is said to be illusion, where there is a notion, but not a corresponding object; as where, nacre

¹ Singular it is, that the evidence brought forward, by the adherents of the Sāṃkhya, in proof of the existence of the soul, concludes it intelligent, not insentient, as they would fain have it to be. Witness these words: प्रकृतिमहतत्किं परार्ध भेतरस्य भोगापत्तेन गुणं सहितवात्त् श्रव्यासनादिवित्य-नुमानेन प्रकृति: परोक्षसंहत एव पुष्प: सिध्यति 1 Sāṃkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, pp. 58-4. 'Nature, the great principle, and the rest, are "for another", i.e., they have for their end the experience of happiness and misery and the liberation of what is other than themselves; inasmuch as they are composite: like a bed, a seat, etc. By this argument, soul, as distinct from nature, and incomplex, is made out to exist.'

One that experiences and has need of liberation cannot, it is manifest, be insentient. In what manner the Sāṃkhya go about to show, that the soul is an experiencer, and requires to be freed, and that it is, at the same time, void of sentience, will be seen in the progress of this chapter.

² अहं कति सुखोद्धिताप्रत्यास्तु अहं गोर इत्यादिभम-शतान्त: पातिलोकानामाण्यशकुस्कन्दिता नोकानुमानस्य बा-धका: ¹ प्रयुत
being mistaken for silver, there is the notion of silver, but not silver as the object of that notion. But the like of this cannot have place as concerns our consciousness of apprehension, will, etc.; for here a notion and its object are one. Apprehension, will, and the rest are objects; the consciousness of them is the notion: and, in my opinion, they are identical. To be sure, when the light reveals a jar, the light is the manifester, and the jar is manifested; but the light, when we see it, is itself alike manifester and manifested. So, when will arises in me, itself manifests itself; for I express, that I have a will of something. From this it is plain, that simultaneously\(^1\) I

प्रत्येक च कर्मिणि क्रियमाणानि सर्वेषः

य: पश्चिति तथाः कर्माणमकतीर्षं स पश्चिति

ह्यादिस्मृत्यपोद्वितिनोनत्तामानेतव बाध्यते

॥ धातवे नारत्का, MS fol. 7, verso. ‘As for the consciousness, “I am a doer”, “I am happy”, etc., since, being comprehended among hundreds of misconceptions, such as “I am fair”, and the like, they are involved in the suspicion of unreliableness, they do not contravene the argument adduced to prove the soul devoid of activity, happiness, etc. On the contrary, the forementioned argument, corroborated by this and other scripta, “He who beholds all works as done by nature alone, and likewise the soul as no doer, beholds aright”, disproves those consciousnesses, or evinces them to be erroneous.’

\(^1\) Further proof, not only of the simultaneousness, but of the identity, of apprehension and the consciousness of it, of will and the consciousness of it, etc., is found in the fact, that it seems impossible, considering their nature, that unperceived apprehension, will, happiness, or the like, can have existence.
both will, and am conscious, or have a notion, of willing; whereas, if those acts, however speculatively two, were two in reality, they could not arise in the soul at the same time. Accordingly, since my own

To those who think otherwise, that is to say, that will and the consciousness of it, for instance, are consecutive and distinct, the author would propound these two questions. Do they hold the notion, that will first arises, and, soon afterwards, the consciousness of it; and that the two for some time co-exist? Or do they hold the notion, that an act of the will is followed by the consciousness of it?

If the first, the author replies, that—as is expressed in the text—he cannot conceive how two qualities can either arise or remain in the soul together: and herein his opinion is, to some extent, supported by the doctrine of the Naiyāyikas; who contend, that the specific qualities of the soul are antagonistic to the length of mutually displacing each other.

The maxim on the subject is आनुभवासुचि नायायानां स्वातरः-नाश्यथात्। In order, however, that one such quality may displace another, their theory is, that the displacing quality must remain with the quality displaced during the last moment of the subsistence of the latter. See the note at the foot of p. 68. This view the author rejects as an absurdity.

To the second position indicated above, the author makes answer, that it is not consciousness which is there implied, but remembrance. On this ground, additionally to the one just mentioned, he considers as faulty the Naiyāyika idea, which supposes, that the consciousness of will co-exists for one moment with will, and then subsists without it. What is here called consciousness, अनुभव, as it is esteemed by the Nyāya, is not so, its object having departed: it is memory.

At all events, if it be insisted, that will and the consciousness of will, etc., are distinct, still it is certain, that they are inseparable; and that they are so is sufficient to show the Sāṅkhya, that the definition of mistake, given above, is inapplicable to such cases of consciousness.
consciousness and my opponent's of our acts of apprehension, will, and other qualities. are not distinct from their objects, viz., those acts of apprehension, will, etc., our consciousness cannot subsist sequestered from their objects; and, therefore, to characterize it as illusive would be erroneous; and, this being the case, my soul, or my opponent's, is not such a thing as he describes to be destitute of apprehension, will, and the rest. If the Sānkhya bestows its labour in order to the emancipation of such a soul, its labour is superfluous; and, besides, it devolves upon every one of us all to strive to save himself. But my opponent does not acknowledge this; he asserting, that the soul described in the Sānkhya is, in verity, such as his and mine, and yet contending, that it has no apprehension, will, or other qualities. I reply that this is totally at variance with all that is rational.

I have distinctly shown, that my consciousness of my apprehension, will, happiness, misery, and so on, cannot be illusory. A Sānkhya, who, shutting the eyes of his common sense, declares, that it is illusory, should take notice of this also, that, if it be proved so, neither can the fact of apprehension, will, happiness, misery, etc., be proved; since, but for consciousness, there is no means of establishing their existence. Should it be replied, that the consciousness of will, etc., is said to be an illusion only in this respect, that its objects, as will, etc., though having existence as qualities of one subject, seem to appertain to a different subject, that is to say, being qualities of the internal organ, they seem to belong to the soul;
I rejoin thus: The Sāṃkhya says, that the consciousness ‘I’ is an affection of the internal organ alone, and that will, happiness, and so forth, are also affections thereof. It is clear, accordingly, that they appear in their proper subject: and how, then, can the consciousness of them be illusion even in the respect in which he declares it to be so? As I am aware, the mystery of the Sāṃkhya’s fantastic economy consists in this. He holds, that the consciousness ‘I’ is, in fact, an affection of the internal organ, but that it cognizes the soul, as being its proper object; though, by reason of misapprehension, intellect also is cognized,¹ as identical with the soul. Hence, the consciousness, ‘I will’, ‘I am happy’, or the like, taking the soul for its object, attributes to it the alien qualities, will, happiness, etc. This consciousness, accordingly, is illusory. Further than this limit error could not extravagate. Can it be, that the consciousness ‘I’ can refer to another than that which entertains it? It is certain, that when one who has a consciousness of ‘I’ uses the word ‘I’, he means his own self; for there cannot be any other word more unmistakably denoting one’s self. If ‘I’ denotes self, tell me whether

¹ लोकानामहिमिति प्रायये चाहैवतं वृद्धिरपि भासते
अनादिमिथ्याज्ञानवाङ्कनास्यदोषस्य प्रतिबन्धेये मानामात्रार्

Pātanjala-bhāṣya-vārttika, MS fol. 87, recto. ‘And, in the consciousness “I” of ordinary people, who lack right apprehension, intellect also, i.e., besides soul, is, of necessity, cognized; for there is no ground for the supposition, that the defect of the impression of unbeginning misapprehension is, in the case of this consciousness, debarred, or becomes inoperative.’
any one but its subject can be that self. It appears to me, that a consciousness such as the Sānkhyā assumes has its parallel in a lamp whose light proceeds from another lamp, or in the shadow of a man cast by his neighbour. For the object of the consciousness 'I' is self; and that in which there is this consciousness is its self: but, in that which is different from itself, there is not this consciousness; and that in which there is not this consciousness is not the object of such consciousness.

But perhaps the Sānkhyā will say, that I, their opponent, who hold, with the Naiyāyikas, that the notion 'I' is a quality of the soul, must grant that it is not unusual for the soul to identify things other than itself with itself; inasmuch as all men who lack right apprehension erroneously consider the body, etc., which are distinct from the soul, to be themselves; for, if they did not so consider, they would not speak of themselves as being dark, or fair, as is conceded by the Naiyāyikas also: and thus it is decided, that the consciousness 'I' may take cognizance of an alien object. I reply, that, in my opinion, men do not generally take their bodies, etc., to be their souls; and the fact, that they say, 'I am fair', or 'I am dark', does not prove that they so take them. This shall be shown, when I come to consider the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika systems. Even if I granted, that some men thus misconceive, still such a mistake would not be one of perception, but one of inference. If it be said, that it is from using his eyes, that a man calls himself dark, or fair, and that, therefore, his notion is a perception; I have to reply, that, on looking at
his body, he indeed sees it to be dark or fair; yet the notion, 'This dark body, or fair, is myself', is not a perception, or immediate cognition. For the immediate cognition 'I' cannot have for its object either the body, or its darkness or fairness. Know, therefore, that men apprehend only their proper selves in the immediate cognition 'I'; and that, as, by means of their eyes, and other organs of sense, they cognize a jar, or cloth, precisely so do they cognize their bodies. When they perceive, that, from changes in the body, cognitions of happiness, misery, etc., arise in the soul, they infer, and wrongly, that the body is the soul. Thus, then, it is certain, that their error is not of immediate cognition, but inferential. They reason, that, since the soul receives happiness and misery through the medium of the body, the body is self. The consciousness 'I' is an immediate cognition; but it cannot have the body for its object. Again, the body or the like is cognized by means of the eyes or other organs of sense; but those organs cannot have the soul for their object. Hence, the confounding together of soul and body is the work of inference, not the work of perception. I was correct, therefore, in saying, that the immediate cognition 'I' can have no other object than self. And, just as it cannot have an object different from itself, so the qualities will, happiness, misery, and the rest, of one cannot appear, in immediate cognition, as located in another. For I have already said, that will and other like qualities are their own manifesters. They must appear where they reside: and how can they appear elsewhere? Moreover, since the consciousness, 'I' can
have only itself for object, how can the will, happiness, etc., which seem to belong to another, be the objects of such a consciousness as 'I will', etc.?

But the Sāṃkhyaśas, though they deny cognition and other qualities to the soul, perceive, that, if it neither cognizes, nor wills, nor is miserable or happy, it cannot be called bound. Why, then, their philosophy, and all their toil to liberate the soul? This objection they anticipate; and, to rebut it, while they refuse to regard cognition, etc., as qualities of the soul, they maintain, that in some sort, it experiences cognition, will, and so on. To arrive at this conclusion, they speculate as follows. Cognition, etc., which they call affections of the internal organ, are reflected in the soul; and these reflexions of cognition and so forth are supposed to be experiences of cognition, etc.; a distinction being taken between the two classes. In this way the soul becomes an experiencer of cognition, will, happiness, and misery. The experience of cognition being itself a cognition, the soul may be said to cognize. But the experiences of will, happiness, and misery cannot, suitably with the Sāṃkhya system, be denominated will, happiness, and misery. Hence, it is not allowed, that the soul wills, and is happy and miserable, but only that it is the experiencer of will, happiness, and misery; though,

1 The European reader must be constantly on his guard against supposing, that by reflexions, the Sāṃkhyaśas mean figuratively impressions made in the essence of the soul. What the Sāṃkhyaśas do mean will be seen from the present chapter, and from the second, with the notes attached to the latter.
occasionally, the reflexions of happiness and misery are found spoken of as happiness and misery, instead of experiences of them. Those experiences are, however, pronounced to be unreal; for an experience of this sort, while the reflexion of an affection of the internal organ, is likewise an evolution from that organ, precisely as its affections are, and extrinsic to the soul. When it is termed unreal, it is not meant, that it has no real existence, but that it does not inhere in the soul, and that it is incapable of producing any change in its essence. It is like the reflexion, in crystal, of a red rose: where, only from misapprehension, would it be thought, that the colour reflected belongs to the crystal. Now, in our view, the soul cannot be an experiencer in consequence of the reflexions spoken of. For, when a man has an experience, a change really takes place in his soul. This would be the case, the Sānkhyas admit, if cognition, will, happiness, and misery could be regarded as qualities of the soul; as they are regarded by the Naiyāyikas, whose dogma on this point, as making the soul changeable, the Sānkhyas arraign as unsound.

On the Sānkhya ground, then, that the reflexions in question work no change in the soul, and are alien to it, the soul cannot, by reason of them, become an experiencer. Nevertheless, the Sānkhyas, strange to tell, for all that they say these reflexions are extrinsic to the soul, declare, that, owing to them, the soul becomes an experiencer of cognition, will, etc. In this there is a plain contradiction in terms; for it amounts to an assertion, coupled with a denial, that the soul has experience. The following remarks will enable
us to understand how the Sānkhyas came to entangle themselves in such an incongruity.

Most imperfect and erroneous, generally, are the notions of the so-called Hindu philosophers about things metaphysical and physical. Whatever two things these schemers see to be in relation, they must straightway ascertain the species of that relation. For instance, after laying down the proposition, that, wherever there is smoke there is fire, the first step to be taken, towards completing the proposition, is, they say, to ascertain the relation that subsists between the smoke and the place of its appearance. So, likewise, the relation of the fire to the site it occupies must be ascertained. And it is only by these relations, that the smoke is a token, and the fire that which is betokened.¹ The two relations here instanced are of the same sort, known as sanyoga. Again, it is deemed necessary to determine the relation between a quality and that to which it belongs, and between a whole and its component elements, etc. The evil that has sprung from thus theorizing is, that the punḍits came to look upon relations, sanyoga, samavāya,² etc., as real objective entities, as having existence apart from the objects they connect, and were led to sunder things further than it is

¹ Such relations are called, respectively, hetutāvachchhedaka and sādhyatāvachchhedaka; or 'the determinator of betokenedness.'

² Sanyoga, one of the four and twenty qualities of the Nyāya, is contact, the mutual touching of two substances. Only, as mentioned in the text, it is an entity, and has existence irrespectively of the substances to which it belongs. Moreover,
reasonable to sunder them. Thus, according to the Naiyāyikas, substance may sometimes be so far independent of qualities as to want them altogether. The qualities of what they reckon as originated substances are not produced, they affirm, until after the production of those substances themselves. Take a jar, for example. During the first moment of its production, it is devoid, in their view, of all qualities whatsoever, as colour, smell, taste, and tangibility. In the second moment it becomes endowed with them. Again, the Naiyāyikas contend, that a whole is a different thing from the mere sum of its parts. By the joining together of the parts a new entity is generated in the whole which results: as has been remarked, it has, it is destroyed by vibhāga ‘separation’; which also is a quality. But, as a cause must exist prior to its effect, separation, before performing its destructive office, is fabled to co-exist with contact for a single moment.

Samavāya, like sanyoyu, is, in the first place, an entity. It is the relation between substance and quality, between a whole and its parts, etc. It is eternal; so that, though the things which it stands between perish, itself remains. Numerically, it is one; and thus it is the same samavāya that connects a jar and its colour in India, and another jar and its colour in Europe; and that connected Adam’s soul with its qualities, and that connects the reader’s with its own. As the reason for maintaining its unity, the Naiyāyikas simply refer to the lex parcumonae, and leave common sense altogether out of the question. It is useless to try to translate samavāya. Colebrooke substitutes ‘aggregation, or intimate and constant relation’; Dr. J. R. Ballantyne, ‘intimate union’, ‘inherence’, ‘coinherence’, ‘coinhesion’.

1 It was a favourite pleasantry of a late most celebrated Naiyāyika puṇḍit at Bénaras, that, in rigid accordance with his system, on receiving back from a goldsmith ornaments wrought from metal furnished to him, it would be quite just
for a single moment, no qualities, whereas its parts have; and it resides in its parts by the relation styled samavāya. It is because a whole is predicated as residing thus in its parts, that the Naiyāyikas, in respect of the enunciation, that smoke betokens fire, set about, first of all, to ascertain by what relation to demand double weight, that of the original gold, and again, as much in ornaments. For it is not held, that, on the production of a whole, the parts concurring to it are annihilated.

It is because of their notion regarding the novelty of wholes, that the Naiyāyikas are designated as asathāryavarādins, in contradistinction from the Sānkhyas and Vedāntins, who are termed satkāryavarādins: the former holding, that an effect is non-existent before its production, and the latter, that an effect has existence, in its material cause, antecedently to its manifestation, or eduction, abhiryāli. Hence, Sānkhyas do not hold, that a property and its substrate, dharma and dharmam, are altogether alien to each other. In one sense, it is true, they are taken as different; but, in another sense, they are reputed one. The reader will have observed, repeatedly, in foregoing notes, the expression dharma-dharmy abhedāt, 'because of the non-difference of a property and that which is propounded.'

In this case, the Sānkhyas and the Vedāntins approve themselves nearer to rationality than the Naiyāyikas: but the case is rare of its kind.

1 The reason assigned is this. Every effect must have three causes, the samavāyi, asamavāyi, and numitta. A jar, when produced, is considered to be a new entity; and the same view is taken of its qualities. Of the jar, its parts are the samavāyi cause; the contact of those parts, its asamavāyi; and the potter and his implements, its numitta. Of the qualities of the jar, itself is the samavāyi; and the qualities of the parts of the jar, are the asamavāyi of those qualities. Their numitta is as before. As every cause must precede its effect, the jar, a cause of its own qualities, must exist previously to the production of its qualities.
it does so. For, as smoke is said to reside in a place by the relation of \textit{samavāya}, so it is said to reside in its parts by the relation of \textit{samavāya}. Therefore, by simply asserting, that, wherever there is smoke there is fire, one is apt to mislead; since smoke, besides residing in a given place, resides, by the relation of \textit{samavāya}, in its own parts, where fire is not.

We have now learnt how the Naiyāyikas, by transmuting relations into entities, and interposing these entities between things correlated, dissemble what in nature we find most closely allied. Accordingly, these philosophers, though they profess to believe cognition, etc., to be qualities of the soul, are seen—when we come to understand how they speak of qualities and substance—to make them extrinsic to it. When, therefore, cognition, etc., are said, in their character of qualities to belong to the soul by the relation of \textit{samavāya}, we recognize a position inadequate to that of their residing in the soul by inherence;\footnote{Let it not be supposed, that, because the Naiyāyikas repute substance the \textit{samavāyi} cause of its qualities—as was said in the last note—they look upon qualities as being intrinsic to substance. For, in the twenty-four qualities, they include differentness, contact, separation, remoteness, etc., as real entities. Of these also the substance in which they reside is the \textit{samavāyi} cause, and they cannot, with any propriety, be said to be intrinsic to such substance.} and yet

\footnote{A very recent authority, of most respectable weight, speaks thus of the three Naiyāyika causes. 'It is commonly understood, that the Nyāya philosophy acknowledges three sorts of causes, substantial or inherent, non-substantial or exterior, and a third which might, perhaps, be conveniently styled the \textit{operative} cause'—Professor Banerjea's \textit{Dialogues on the Hindu Philosophy}, p. 127.}
the Nyāya, on the point immediately under discussion, is much nearer to the truth than the Sāṅkhya and the Vedānta.

And now we are prepared for easy apprehension of a transition to a much graver error. If the soul, ask the Sāṅkhyaśas, may become a cognizer, etc., from possessing cognition, etc., by the relation of samavāya, why may it not become so from possessing cognition and so forth by any other relation? That the soul becomes thus possessed by the relation of samavāya, they refuse to admit; since the admission would imply a change in the soul's nature. Still, studious to make out the soul a cognizer, etc., or else an experancer of cognition, etc., they proceed in this wise. The reflexions of cognition, will, happiness, misery, etc., are experiences of them, severally. These reflexions, or experiences, rest upon the soul. To the Sāṅkhyaśas an alternative is here, they think, presented. They allow themselves to suppose, that the soul cognizes, wills, etc., in the affections of the internal organ, cognition, will, etc., which are connected with the soul by the

Obviously enough it was the old, and all but universally diffused, ex-nihilian maxim, which suggested to the Naiyāyikas, that every effect must have a samavāyi cause; a cause which, by legitimate deduction from that maxim, ought to mean one from which an effect is evolved, or developed. From this notion the Naiyāyikas have, however, strayed afar; and what they intend by their samavāyi cause is equally unintelligible and unaccountable. This is evident from their contending, that an effect is altogether a new entity, as compared with its samavāyi cause; and from this, that they maintain substance to be such a cause of its own qualities; these being extraneous to it, and of a different category.
relation of reflexion; or to suppose, if they choose, that the soul is an experiencer of cognition, etc., in those reflexions, the experiences of cognition, etc., which rest on the soul by the relation of sanāyāya. In order to the soul's cognizing, etc., what does it matter, the Sānkhyā asks of the Naiyāyika, if cognition and the rest do not reside in the soul by the relation of samavāya; seeing that the soul has them by some other relation; and there being no ground for restriction to the relation of samavāya? The Naiyāyika, thus controverted by the Sānkhyā, cannot, in my opinion, return, with his imperfect views, any answer founded in reason.

Precisely the error of the Sānkhyas, which has just been detailed, is that of a distinguished pundit of Benares, to whom I applied for solution of divers of my doubts. One of my questions was as follows: Since, if the Sānkhyas believe that misery resides in the soul as a reflexion only, which reflexion is held to be an evolution from the internal organ, the soul cannot really be miserable, why all the toil of the Sānkhya system to liberate the soul? The reply was, in part, as follows:  

1 And if thou intendest to imply that, according to the Sānkhya, the soul cannot be miserable through the unreal relation of reflexion,

1 First, he detected an inaccuracy in the expression 'if the Sānkhyas believe, that misery resides in the soul as a reflexion only'; for, in strict Sānkhya phraseology the reflexion of misery is not misery, but is its experience. Ever and anon, however, the Sānkhyas express themselves as the author expressed himself. See the first passage from the Sānkhya-pravachana-bhāshya, given at the foot of p. 44.
... thou shouldst be asked, in return, "Though thou holdest, as in the Nyāya, that the suffering of misery, which is an experience, is a quality, still, how, either by that quality, or by samāvāya, can the soul be miserable?" ¹ In passing, the pundit assumes, inadvertently, that I here go the whole way with the Naiyāyikas. I take his purport to be this. If, with a view to prove the soul miserable, a relation between it and misery, an affection of the internal organ, is demanded, the relation of reflexion is available; and, should it be objected that the soul cannot become miserable by such a relation, it may be inquired how it can become so even by the relation of samāvāya? Then he goes on as follows: 'And what superiority, save thy long conversancy with it, dost thou see in the Naiyāyika system, that it alone pleases thee? And what inferiority, waiving that it is novel to thee, dost thou see in the Sāṅkhya system, that thou findest the acceptance of it difficult?" ²

¹ यदि च प्रतिविम्बरप्राप्तवसंबन्धवेतनानस्मानो दुःखिताः न सम्भवतीति तत्रांश्यतर्थिः * * * भवानेवं प्रतिप्रश्न्यः। तद्रूःखोऽगः साक्षात्कार्षपः साक्षात्कार्ष्य गुणविशेष इति तेन वा समवायेन वास्तमा कथं दुःखी स्यात्।

² कं च विशेषं नैपायिकमाने पूर्वपरिचयन्यतितितिं पश्चिम चैन तदेव भवते रोचते कं चारभिनवादन्यपकर्ष सान्यतिः चैन तत्स्य प्रहण आयुःमान िःश्यति।
Another question proposed by me was this: If misery belongs to the internal organ, how can its removal profit the soul? The Pundit replies: 'The fact, that misery resides in another than the soul, does not prevent its cessation from being a good to the soul. For misery, which is held, by those who abhor the relation of reflexion, to reside in the soul by samavāya, resides, by some other relation, in what is not soul.' In the Nyāya, cognition and other qualities, though residing in the soul by the relation of samavāya, are spoken of as residing in time by temporal relation, in space, by spatial relation, etc. What the learned Pundit means is, then, this. If it be argued, that, because the Sāṅkhyaśa believe misery to reside in another than the soul, that is to say, in the internal organ, its removal cannot benefit the soul, neither can its removal benefit the soul even according to the Naiyāyikas; inasmuch as, in their view, misery resides, by various relations, in other things besides the soul. As we are aware, agreeably to the Sāṅkhya, misery, etc., are qualities of the internal organ. If they are so, what has their continuance, or their elimination, to do with the soul? But of this weighty objection the Pundit makes small account. The reason is, that, to his mind, samavāya, here a relation of the first importance, is quite on a parity with what

1 दृ:खःनिवृत्ते: पुष्पार्थचे हि दृ:खःच्यात्यगतव न बाधकं प्रतिबिम्बसम्बन्धविद्विद्विनिमितः समवायेनात्मनि स्वीकार्याम्पि।
दृ:खःयं कोनिचि सम्बन्धं राश्वस्तमिनि सत्वाः।
are here inferior relations, such as the temporal and the spatial. This will serve as a sample of the degree to which the common sense of the pundits has become distempered. And I shall now address myself to show what that relation is between the experience of cognition, will, happiness, misery, etc., and that which is in truth the experiencer of them.

First, however, I must bestow a few words on the great error, committed by the Sāṅkhyaśas, of distinguishing between happiness and the like, and their experiences. Who is conscious of any such distinction? From experience of happiness deduct experience; can one then form any idea what happiness is by itself? Not at all. Consequently, all the qualities of the soul, to wit, cognition, will, activity, happiness, and so on, ought to be regarded as so many different sorts of experience; as was previously exemplified, in the case of will. Or, should there be some very nice distinction between happiness, or the like, and the experience of it, the two, at all events, are inseparable. It follows, that there is no foundation for the theory of separating cognition, etc., from their experiences, on which the doctrine depends, that the internal organ is the subject of happiness and so forth, and that the soul is their experiencer.

And now I purpose to make out, that the soul cannot, by any chimerical reflexions of cognition, will, etc., be erroneously regarded as experiences of cognition and the rest become an experiencer thereof. It is self-evident, that the experiences of cognition, will, happiness, misery, etc., are qualities of their experiencer: for a quality is that which cannot exist abstracted
from its substrate. For example, the existence of colour, or of taste, or of length, or of breadth, under such abstraction, is impossible. And it is the same as concerns the experience of cognition, or the like, considered severally from its experience. Indeed, experience, thus circumstanced, is brought into the category of the son of a barren woman and the horn of a hare. From this it is clear, that the experiences of cognition, will, etc., are qualities; and, being such, they are connected with their substrates by the relation through which every other quality belongs to that which possesses it.

In the terminology of the Naiyāyikas, the relation between quality and substance is that of samanāya. But this samanāya, as they describe it, seems to me not only hypothetical, but irrational; and so I decline to designate by it the relation between quality and substance. To this relation I assign no name whatever. When, in our argumentations, we have reached the boundary of the certain and of the intelligible, there is nothing left for us but to be silent. As for the relation of quality and substance, reason teaches us that it is widely different from sanyoga and such other relations. It is a relation through which quality penetrates and permeates the very essence of substance, and participates in it. Just so does experience with reference to an experiencer.

A reflexion, though in respect of space it is very near the soul—in fact, within it, like everything else; for, in the Sānkhya, the soul is all-pervading—is far remote from its essence. In the Sānkhya scheme, it is an evolution from the internal organ, and must
reside in the soul by the relation of sanjóya, and not otherwise. Now, how can the soul by virtue of it be an experiencer? For, if it has not experience in its proper essence, it has none at all. Analogically, let it be, that a sage sits ever so close to a fool, or embraces him, if you will, can the fool, in consequence, be pronounced wise?

The European physicists, who have explored acoustics, optics, and other similar departments of science, declare that, when a man sees an object, the following process is transacted. First, the object is imprinted upon the retina behind which is a sensory nerve connecting it with the brain. The nerve and the brain are thus successively affected. Then, owing to some relation between the brain and the soul, that is to say, between matter and what is not matter, the object seen is cognized. That relation is incomprehensible; and yet of so much we are certain: that neither does the objects being reflected into the eye, nor does the effect produced in the sensory nerve, through the reflexion, nor does the action upon the brain, through the sensory nerve, constitute the soul's cognition. For, though the relation between the brain and the soul is most intimate, still the brain is distinct from the soul, and extrinsic to it. The soul's cognizing consists in this, that itself, that is to say, by its essence, apprehends an object through the eye and the other media enumerated.

The conclusion is, that, if the Sánkhya's reflexions of the affections, cognition, will, activity, happiness, and misery, are distinct from the soul's proper essence, they are not the soul's experiences of cognition, will,
etc.; since, though, as to space, they are exceedingly proximate to the soul, yet, viewed essentially, they are as distant as the east from the west. Inasmuch, therefore, as the soul can neither cognize, nor will, nor energize, nor be happy or miserable, nor be an experiencer of cognition, etc., why should the Sāṅkhyastrive so hard to liberate it? In another way, moreover, the Sāṅkhyastrive themselves and others. They say, that happiness and the like are not really in the soul, but that, from non-discrimination, the soul thinks itself miserable and bound, this is its wretchedness, emancipation from which is desirable. In this statement there are two great errors. One is this. The non-discrimination spoken of is itself an affection of the internal organ. As such, it has no intrinsic relation to the soul; only that of a reflexion; and how, then, can the soul be prejudiced by it? The other error is this. Even if the soul, from non-discrimination, did think itself miserable and bound—which the Sāṅkhyastrive will not grant—still, it could take no harm merely from thus thinking, so long as it did not, in reality, incur misery by reason of non-discrimination. If, then, the Sāṅkhyastrive conceded, that it thus incurs misery, it would be really miserable. And, if they deny—and they do deny—that it does, it follows, that it stands in no need of being emancipated.

Therefore, that position only, which is laid down in the sixty-second stanza of the Sāṅkhya-kārīka, can be justified on Sāṅkhya principles; namely, that it is not the soul but nature that is hampered and that is disengaged.
I have already shown, that the Sānkhyas go to all the trouble they take to prove the soul devoid of apprehension, desire, etc., in order that the soul may be proved susceptible of emancipation.\(^1\) They allege, that, if apprehension, desire, happiness, misery, and the rest be acknowledged to be qualities of the soul, they must be a part of its proper nature: and the nature of anything is inalienable. Only by making out the soul to be unendowed with apprehension and the like, they say, does its emancipation become possible. For, in the view of all the pundits, there is no emancipation apart from insentience. That riddance from pain is indispensable, we all hold alike. Now, let it be granted, for a moment, that these notions are correct; that is to say, that emancipation cannot take place without the abolition of apprehension, and that misery, like cognition, etc., if a quality of the soul, must continue for ever. Still, it is improper, out of fear for the soul, to describe a thing as being other than it is, and to give aid to such a deceit by sophistry. I mean, that it is wrong to insist, that apprehension, desire, and so on, which are really qualities of the soul, are not so. Man, we know, is mortal. But, if, from dread of death, I, a man, affirm that I am not a man, shall I on that account escape death? If, therefore, the Sānkhyas are convinced that whatever has apprehension, desire, etc., for qualities is doomed to the fearful evil of never parting with them, it is

\(^1\) It cannot but seem extraordinary blindness, in the Sānkhyas, not to perceive, that the very efforts which they put forth to show, that the soul is capable of being emancipated, go to prove that it has no need of being emancipated.
the counsel of wisdom, seeing that they are left without resource, to abide their lot in patience, and not to belie reality.

The truth is, however, that the pundits' notion is baseless, that emancipation consists in definitive alienation of apprehension, etc. And the assertion of the Sāṅkhya is erroneous, that, whatever has misery for a quality can never be discharged of it. When the cause of misery is removed, the misery likewise takes its departure; and Almighty God will deliver from it whomsoever He blesses with His grace. I shall treat of these points when I discuss the Nyāya.
CHAPTER VI

Brief Consideration of the Topic of the Mīmāṃsā, with a few Remarks on the Intellectual Peculiarities of the Pundits, and on their Style of Reasoning.

Greatly do the Mīmāṃsakas eri, in not acknowledging God;¹ and, again, while they do not acknowledge Him, in believing in virtue and vice, and in laying upon the heads of men the burden of rites and ceremonies; and, lastly, in maintaining, that the Veda has existed from eternity. My refutation, in the third chapter of this section, of the first two of these errors, as held by the Sāṅkhyaś, will equally well apply to the Mīmāṃsakas. But there is this difference of view between the two schools, as regards the Veda. The Sāṅkhyaś hold, that, at the beginning of every renovation of the universe, it issues anew from the mouth of Brahmā, but without his composing it; whereas, according to the Mīmāṃsakas, it has always existed: and the same arguments that are good against the former notion are just as cogent when applied to the

¹ To name one Mīmāṃsaka,—Pārthaśārathī Miśra, in the first chapter of the Śāstra-dīpikā, labours at length to overset the arguments adducible to prove the existence of deity.
latter. However, as for this latter view, that is to say, that the Veda was made by no one, but of itself has been in existence from all duration, one may indeed wonder at such an irrational theory. If asked for their proofs of this, the Mimāṃsakas can only reply, that no name of the writer of the Vedas has come down to us. But what sort of a proof is this? Many is the book whose author's name nobody knows; but do we infer, therefore, that such a book never had a beginning in time? And how, pray, differs an ancient book from an ancient house? And who ever concluded, that an old house had been built from the beginning of all things, on the ground, that its builder's name has been lost in oblivion? There is, in short, only one topic connected with the Mimāṃsā, on which I purpose to remark. It is as follows:—

To find, that the Mimāṃsā esteems the Veda to be infallibly authoritative, and, nevertheless, decides that the gods named in it are all imaginary, and that the relations concerning them there are mere fables; and to find, that, though Indra is denied to exist, yet to make offerings in his name is sufficient to ensure

1 यदि वेदान्त कर्ता कश्चिदयमिश्रित ततोऽस्यन्ययेत्परमप्राया बुद्धादिवद्भस्मिति | Pārthasārathi Miśra, in the first chapter of the Śāstra-dipikā. 'Had there been any author of the Veda, surely remembrance of him would have been preserved by successive students of the Veda; as has been the case in respect of Buddha and others.'

Pārthasārathi goes on to urge, that, if the Vedas had had an author, it is impossible he could ever have been forgotten.

2 See the extract from the Bhātta-dipikā, cited above.
great reward; cannot but strike one with astonishment. Wherever, allege the Mīmāṃsakas, the gods and their exploits are spoken of in the Veda, it is not intended to recount actual facts; the end in view being to magnify the benefit of ritual acts, and so to allure men to engage in them. But how can any one who has the slightest discrimination say, after reading the Veda, that the persons who originally addressed its hymns to Indra and others, did not themselves believe these to be real divinities? And who can imagine a man's doing worship to an unreal god, and singing praises to a nonentity, and imploring nobody, in the expectation of receiving, therefore, eminent recompense?

On this subject Mīmāṃsakas seem to reason thus. All our strivings are for the attainment of reward; this reward being dependent upon works; and information about works being obtainable from the preceptive enunciations of the Veda. If we accept these three things, why need we accept more? If we hold the precepts of the Veda to be true, what harm is there in our looking upon the rest of the Veda as a romance? And, if reward comes of works, these suffice; and what is the use of the gods and the rest? Again, if works give rise to various fruits, then, as a seed possesses an innate power of originating a sprout, so, by maintaining that works possess an innate energy, we are enabled to account for the production of the world; and what necessity, in that case, is there of a God? To refute such strange notions may be spared: the very statement of them is refutation. Still, I shall reply to them in the third chapter
of the second section, where I speak of the error into which the pundits fall on the subject of virtue and vice.

Thus I have examined, in the present and three preceding chapters, the main doctrines of the Sāṇkhya—the Yoga included—and of the Mīmāṃsā. Any man whose common sense is unsophisticated, on inspecting these doctrines as set forth and defended in the Sāṇkhya and Mīmāṃsā, must perceive, that the pundits are most faulty in their manner of argumentation. As compared with those systems, the Nyāya and the Vaiśeshika are greatly eligible. And yet their adherents also, ancient and modern, betray the intellectual defects common to all the pundits; as will before long be evinced.

Even as concerns things that are self-evident, these scholars go deplorably amiss. When a person reaches this state, it is most difficult to bring truth home to him. If a man, for instance, gets to doubt whether he has twenty fingers and toes, who can resolve his misgiving for him? You count them, one by one, to him; but, nevertheless, he cannot satisfy himself that they make up a score. After this, there is no hope of removing his uncertainty. Something similar to this state of mind is that of the pundits; as one cannot but see, on looking into the Sāṇkhya and Mīmāṃsā. To dispel their difficulties is, consequently, no easy task; and yet I have ventured to undertake it. But, such are the peculiarities of my country-men—as I know from old experience—that they will not understand my answers; and the real reason is, that they do not wish to understand them. Where
there are persons who cannot be reached by rational arguments, we can only commend them to God; for to Him is possible what to man is impossible.

In this, again, the pundits manifest their wrong habits of mind, that when they set about considering a subject, they do not, first of all, soberly ask themselves what the facts are, bearing on it, which they and others are acquainted with. Such is the spell over their minds, and, from prepossession towards what they wish to believe, such is the partiality of their contemplation, that they adopt maxims which are baseless, as if they had no imperfection, and accept defective illustrations in place of proofs, and reason on the strength of them: nor do they reflect whether their arguments are cogent or futile, or whether they may not be met by counter-arguments. And so they go on, rearing one thing upon another, utterly regardless of the preposterousness of their conclusions.

One more defect of their intellectual constitution is this, that they fail to inquire what things are within the range of human reason, and what are beyond it. With the short cord of human wit they vainly essay to measure the profundities of God’s fathomless perfections, and to determine their limits. He who will act thus cannot but stumble and at last fall disastrously.

People who follow the dictates of common-sense steer clear, for the most part, of such errors. Common-sense is that sense which is shared by the generality of mankind. By its aid, even the illiterate and rustics are able, in their daily occasions and transactions, to
judge between the true and the false, and between the useful and the harmful. When any one, abandoning it, sets about adducing grand arguments in support of his favourite notions, he is very apt to get lost in a wilderness of nonsense, and to think, that the ground is above his head and the sky beneath his feet. But, to obey the admonitions of common-sense is not the way of the pundits; 'and so we see how such wonderful dogmas as they profess came to be suggested to them.

Their style of reasoning may be illustrated by the following story. Once upon a time, two men, travelling in company, laid a wager as to who would first reach the end of the next day's journey. One of them, getting up early the following morning, saw that the other was still asleep. With great complacency, he thereupon dressed, tied up his kit, and set off. In his haste, however, unawares to himself, he put on the other's turban instead of his own. Hurrying forward, on reaching the end of the day's journey, he found his companion had not got the start of him, and was not even within sight. And then he sat down, opened his bundle, took out his mirror, and began to inspect himself. Seeing that he had on the other's turban, he flung down the mirror, exclaiming: 'Alas! well-a-day! I have taken all this trouble to get here first; and, after all, my friend has outstripped me.' On this, a by-stander, who had heard his lament, began to reason with him. 'What do you mean?' said he. 'Here you are, arrived and waiting; and how can you say, that your friend has, after all, outstripped you? Can you be so bewildered as to believe, that
your sense of self has been transferred to another?' But still he turned a deaf ear. He had resolved on taking it for an invariable rule, that his friend's turban could be on no one's head but his friend's; and, accordingly, he must infer, that he himself had become the other, and that he had all along been labouring under illusion, in thinking it was himself who had started first on the day's journey, and prosecuted it, and completed it.
SECTION II
SECTION II
CHAPTER I

Briefly prefatory with an Examination of the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika Doctrines touching God.

I shall now consider the Nyāya and the Vaiśeshika. But, as I have before noted, there are many doctrines common to almost all the Systems. When I take up such points, in discussing the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika, what I shall offer will, therefore, be applicable to the Systems generally.

At the outset I remarked, that the authors of nearly all the Systems announce, as the great end of their compositions, the attainment of final beatitude. At their respective beginnings, the Nyāya and the Vaiśeshika Aphorisms make distinct statements to this effect. And so far forth they are worthy of commendation; it being most fitting to all men, and it being of all things most necessary, that they should strive, with their entire might, to find out the means of salvation. Yet, I cannot concur with the partisans of the Systems, in regarding right apprehension as the chief cause of emancipation; my own belief being, that this effect springs from the spontaneous grace of God. I acknowledge, indeed, that right apprehension is instrumental to salvation; but it is not that right
apprehension, consisting in discriminating between soul and what is not soul, which the authors of the Systems teach to be the sole means thereto. That sort of right apprehension, taken by itself, I hold to be of no benefit; a position which I shall substantiate by and by. The sort of right apprehension which I maintain to be beneficial is this: rightly to apprehend God, and oneself, and one's wretchedness, and the way of escape from it, and what man ought to do, and what he ought to forbear. I do not mean, however, that to acquire, in its entirety, a right apprehension of these things is absolutely necessary; for this is impossible to man. I mean, that he ought to make this acquisition in so far as it is indispensible to his good. Requisite right apprehension, as concerns God, should be such as to move man to honour, to love, to worship, and to fear Him; such as to purify man's nature, and to lead him to love virtue and to abhor vice. And, further, a man's right apprehension, pertaining to himself, should be so much as to enable him to appreciate his place in the order of the universe; to think of himself as he appears in the sight of God; and to understand his relation to God, and his relations to his fellow-creatures, in order that he may be qualified to act according to those relations. And, again, a man's right apprehension should be sufficient to qualify him to realize his own wretchedness, so that he may take thought how to escape from it; and sufficient for him to acquaint himself with the means calculated to bring about such escape, so that he may avail himself of those means. But of these things there is no correct account in the
Nyāya, or in the other Systems. Far from it, they inculcate numerous errors concerning them.

Most inappropriate is the account given, in the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika, of the divine attributes, such as God's greatness, power, wisdom, holiness, and justice.

The soul, atoms, the mind, and many other things, no less than God, they hold to have existed from eternity. Like God, they have been, of themselves, from all duration, and were created by no one. How far does this view fall short of God's greatness, absoluteness, and sovereignty! According to the Naiyāyika, souls and atoms are innumerable; and, if they have always had spontaneous existence, it is manifest, that their existing is not in subordination to the will of God. As they had not their origin from God's will, so neither could they be by Him brought to nought. Even if God had willed otherwise, no change could have been operated as to their existence: nor will He be able to operate any such change. How, then, can absoluteness and sovereignty be predicated of God, as regards them? Him we call absolute and sovereign, on whose will, or permission, everything depends; and without entire subjection to whose will, nothing can be or happen. If the existence of souls, atoms, etc., be not subject to the will of God, His sovereignty does not extend to their existence. On this principle, God cannot be proved to be God: for God is He who is over all.

To this view the pundits would bring forward this objection: 'If you deny unbeginning existence to atoms, what cause of the origin of the world can you
produce? For every effect must have a material cause; as a jar, clay. But for the clay, of what will the potter make his jar? In this way God formed the world out of atoms; and how could He have made it without atoms? In reply, I would ask the pundits, whether they consider the power of God to be of like kind to that of the potter. If the powers of the two be similar, then God required limbs and appliances; just as the potter, in fabricating a jar, is obliged to use his hands, feet, and sundry other implements. And, if it be conceded, that God, unlike the potter, had no need of limbs and appliances, but could have made the world by His mere will, where is the difficulty in acknowledging, that He could have created it without a material cause? By His inscrutable power He was able to originate the entire world, material cause and material effect together. If it be objected, that this is inconceivable, I would ask, whether it be not equally inconceivable, that God could have framed the world out of atoms, by His will alone, and without recourse to bodily members. Do we see, anywhere among men, a workman of such skill, as that, by a simple operation of mind, he can call effects into being? My opponent may perhaps say, that the human soul answers these conditions; for, by its mere will, it sets the hands and feet in motion: and he may add, that, in like sort, at the beginning of the world, God, by His will, imparted motion to the terrene and other atoms. Let the parallelism of the illustration be granted; yet the main difficulty, that of inconceivability, is still where it was. We know, to be sure, that the soul, by its
mere will, moves the hands and feet. But who can comprehend how this comes to pass? The will is invisible and intangible: resembling neither a cord, with which a thing may be brought near; nor a staff, with which a thing may be raised or thrown down. How can it have any influence on the hands and feet, which are insentient matter? And how can it raise or depress them? The whole is inconceivable. If, then, the works of God outreach our conception, how can we assign limits to His power, which is inscrutable? But the soul's communicating motion to the hands and feet cannot properly be drawn into analogy: for the hands and feet are of the body, which belongs to the soul; but terrene and other atoms are not of the body of God, He being bodiless. The difficulty of operating, by the mere will, upon what is not of one's body remains, therefore, precisely where we found it. Nor can you call terrene and other atoms the body of God; for you cannot maintain, that the qualities and nature of body are possessed by them. Thus, the body influences the soul; but you cannot affirm, that God is affected.

1 According to the author of the Dinakari, the following opinion was held by the adherents of Āchārya, by which title Udayana Āchārya, most probably, is intended: अस्तु * * *

ईश्वरस्य नित्यं शरीरं तथापि नैश्वर्यांतरिक्तशरीरिरसिद्धि:
परमाणुनामेष तत्त्वरित्तोपगमात्। 'Let it be granted, that Isvara possesses an eternal body: still it is not established, that Isvara has a distinct, or proper body; for it is held, by us, that the atoms themselves are his body.'
by terrene atoms, etc., in the same manner. Since there are, thus, numerous characteristics of body which do not appertain to the terrene and other atoms, if you give the name of God's body to these atoms, still our bodies cannot be adduced as analogous to them. My meaning, in sum, is, that, whereas the tenet, that God created all things by His infinite and inscrutable power, is not open to exception, the opinion, which, in arguing the independent and unbeginning existence of the material world, undeniably abridges God of His supreme absoluteness and plenary sovereignty, is imbued with error.

There are two particular objections, say the pundits, to the view, that souls had their origin from God. The first is, that it involves, as against God, the imputation of unequal dealing and cruelty. The second is, that, if we hold souls to be generated, we must hold them to be destructible. I shall return to these points in a short time.

The Nyāya and Vaiṣeshika dogma, which is also that of the Yoga and Vedānta, that whatever God does—as in framing the world, for instance—He does solely for the purpose of awarding to souls the fruit of their works—He doing nothing of His own free will—is, likewise, exceptionable. On what ground is God believed to be thus fettered? To know, to will, and to do are natural faculties of an intelligent being; and, if God is an intelligent Being, it is congruous to maintain, that, by virtue of His free will, He can act whenever it may seem good to Him so to do.

To this the pundits would reply, that, if God, without reference to the works of souls, of His mere
will fashioned the universe, the blemish would be imputable to Him, that there was some want, to satisfy which He engaged in creation:¹ but, if it be held, that He did so in accordance with the works

¹ Nearly all the Hindu philosophers, the Baudhhas included, have taught the eternity of the soul and the tenet of metempsychosis. Had occasion been presented to them of assaulting the position, that God created the world irrelatively to the works of souls, we may judge, from the ensuing passage, how, in all likelihood, they would have made answer: प्रेशावतप्रदः सः मनोकारणपर्यायम् अवतरणते | तेऽ च जगन्मोदिते व्यावर्तमाने प्रेशावदिन्धुमयः प्रवृत्तियोऽवधिः अपरिसुत्तमः न भवतसकलेर्षितस्य भविष्यती जगत् सुजल: किमस्यविलक्षितं स्वरूपं | ताति परमेश्वरादास्य सर्वेऽ प्रवृत्ति: | प्राक् सर्गाय तेज्वानामिन्द्रय-शरीरविष्णुनुस्तनौ दुःखाताचेऽक्ष्य प्रहाणित्चन्ता कार्यम् |

Tattva-kaumudi, p. 52. 'The Action of the prudent or sane is ever accompanied by wish of self-profit, or else by compassion. And these, being impertinent as concerns the creation of the world, refute the notion, that it, such creation, was due to the act of a prudent person. for there can be no unfulfilled desire of a Lord whose every wish is already satisfied, that he should be creator of the world. Nor could his creative agency be exerted from compassion. Inasmuch as, prior to creation—since the senses, bodies, and objects were as yet unproduced—there was no misery of souls, for dispelling what misery was there scope for compassionate desire?'

Vāchaspati Miśra, while engaged in upholding the atheistic doctrines of the Sāńkhya, writes as above, in opposition to those who maintain the belief of a Creator.

The last two words of the Sanskrit are of very doubtful correctness; but no manuscript is at hand, by which to mend them, if wrong.
of souls, the blemish of His having a want will not attach to Him; and it follows, that He made the world for the sole purpose of awarding to every one the consequences due to his deeds. My answer is, that neither do I maintain, that God made the world to fulfil any want implying that He lacked aught, to obtain which He engaged in creation: but I do maintain, that, by reason of one of the perfections of His nature, goodness, He was pleased to make manifest, through the medium of creation, His supremely love-worthy and wondrous attributes. God made the world, says my opponent, in order to requite the good and evil deeds of souls. But why should He require?¹ The very objection intimated against me,

¹ We have seen above, at p. 53, that, in the view of the theistic Hindus, to save the Deity from the imputation of unequal dealing and cruelty, it is thought necessary to refer the unequal portions of souls in this world to the diverse works of those souls in bygone states of existence. To Vāchaspati Miśra, in his character of advocate on behalf of the Sāṅkhya, this seems unsatisfactory. We find him saying अपि च क्रुष्णया प्रेषित ईश्वर: सुखिन एव जन्तुन्न भूजेन न विचित्रान। काव्यवेचन्याद् वैचित्यमिति चेत कृतमस्य प्रेषिन्य: कामविध्वसनेन तदन्यिनमालादेवोचेतन्यापि कर्मणः प्रदुःखनुपत्तेऽत्तकार्ये-शरीरेऽन्निधिंश्चित्यानुत्तप्ति दुःखानुत्तरपि सुकर्मचान। Tattvartha-sūtram, pp. 52-3. 'More than this, Ḣāvara, if moved, by compassion, to create, would create creatures in happiness not of diverse conditions. If to this it be replied, that the diverseness of the condition of souls is owing to the diverseness of their works, it is a pity, I reply, that he, Ḣāvara, prudent, should
and which I set aside, here arises, to wit, that there was some want of God’s to be supplied by such requital. If it be replied, that, in virtue of the equity\(^1\) of His nature, He awards to each the fruit of his works, I rejoin, that it is in virtue of an excellence of His nature, namely, His goodness, that He made manifest His supremely loveworthy attributes by creating souls and by making them to rejoice in the contemplation of His perfections. Any one has discrimination enough to perceive, that, from mere vanity, to go about exhibiting one’s importance, under the impulse of a longing to hear it proclaimed by the world, is one thing; and that it is quite another thing, to make manifest the excellence of anything because such manifestation is fitting and laudable. When a foolish man, actuated by vanity, goes here and there to display his importance, everybody laughs at him. But, if a learned European were to bring some very extraordinary machine to this country, and invite people to his house, and show them the wonders of the machine free of charge, no one would deride him, but, on the contrary, all would thank and praise him for his gratuitous kindness and trouble. Just so, the superintend works; since, but for his very superintendence works, being unintelligent, could not proceed to act; and, consequently, as their effects, namely, the body, the senses, and sense-objects would not be produced, the non-production of misery would be a matter of facility.’

\(^1\) Indeed, the reply here put into the mouth of the Hindu gives him credit for clearer notions touching God’s equity than he could really come by from study of his so-called sacred books.
manifestation of anything that is excellent is no fault, but itself an excellence. God, therefore, because of the very excellence of His nature, makes known, through creation, and otherwise, Hisloveworthy and wondrous attributes. That such attributes, calculated to awaken affection and joy, should for ever remain hidden, would seem most unmeet.

Let us now consider God’s attributes of justice and holiness, as viewed in the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika. As for His justice, if we scan these systems superficially, it may seem, that the doctrine of His bestowing requital according to works involves it. And, when the followers of those systems declare, that even the most trifling pain endured in this world must be taken to have had sin for its cause, and that, therefore, a former state of existence must be admitted, or else God’s equity suffers the imputation of imperfectness, it looks as if they believed, in all its fulness, in justice as an attribute of Deity. On looking more closely, however, we find, that here too they are quite in the dark, as also touching God’s holiness.

As I have before remarked, the Systems receive the Vedas, the Smṛitis, the Purāṇas, etc., as authorities. The former, therefore, share with the latter any faults ascribable to them on the score of portraying amiss the justice, holiness, and other attributes of God. Let it not be supposed, that I am going out of my way to fasten faults on the Systems. Secrets, which else lurk unperceived, necessarily stand forth in any thorough-going examination such as that with which I am occupied.
No man is ignorant, that God is just and holy; and we need not be surprised to find Him so called in religions of human origin. But man, unaided, cannot attain to a correct knowledge of the holiness and other attributes of the Deity. His inability betrays itself, when he ventures into details on the subject, or, incidentally, when he is treating of matters cognate to it. Hence, the express declarations regarding God’s holiness and other attributes, which we find in a book on any religion, are not a sufficient warrant, in the examination of that religion. Further and fuller exploration is indispensable. We should consider all that there is in the book, and also what is there omitted, and likewise all that has legitimate connexion with its subject-matter; and then we are in a position to pass judgement on it. From the fact, with reference to the Systematists, that they admit as authorities the Vedas, the Purāṇas, etc., it comes out, that, if the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika do not, in express words, militate very greatly against the justice and holiness of God, it is not because the writers on those schemes entertained fit and correct notions of the divine attributes, but simply because they did not dilate on those topics. Had they done so, they would have exhibited errors of every description.

Again, if we search out what the Systematists teach concerning those things which man is to do, and those things which he is to forbear, and other points allied with religion, we may learn what views they hold of God’s justice, and holiness, and other attributes. For, so strict is the connexion between
morality and theology, that any faults which are found in views about the former imply, of necessity, faults in the views held about the latter. Of morality grossly wrong ideas occur in the Vedas, the Purāṇas, and the rest, and, where these err, the Systems participate their errors.

I shall, moreover, show, in the sequel, that the doctrines of the Systems, taken by themselves, touching virtue and vice, are signally faulty; and, such being the case, from this ground also it results, that they mistake as regards holiness and others of the divine attributes.

According to the tenets of the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika, God can in no wise possess the attribute of mercy. It being one of the dogmas of these systems, that no effect can take place irrelatively to the works of souls, whatever a soul receives must be accounted a consequence of its works; and, if it succeeds in attaining to salvation, it earns salvation. It is evident, that there is an exercise of mercy, when God bestows what has not been merited. The existence of such mercy is at variance, however, with the dogmas of the Nyāya, of the Vaiśeshika, and of all the other systems.

Moreover, since the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika deny, that God made the world of His free will, but affirm, that He did so to requite souls, they altogether do away with the goodness which He evinced in creation. When we behold God’s world, on every side we perceive evidences of His wonderful goodness and bounty. In the first place, man, before he was created, was nothing; but, in vouchsafing to him
existence, and life, and the faculty of knowledge, how has God constituted him capable of happiness! Though, now in our fallen state, it is ours to suffer much misery, still all our suffering, nay death itself, is the fruit of our sin; and we alone are to blame for it. Had man never sinned, his happiness and especially that which, by reason of his rectitude of mind and purity of original nature, he would have enjoyed from knowing God, from devotion and love to Him, and from communion with Him, would have surpassed description. When we behold the sun, the source of so much gladness and benefit, or the moon and the sidereal world, it seems, indeed, as though the goodness of the compassionate Author of our being were holding converse with us in a bodily form. The very trees, which comfort and refresh us, and yield us their luscious fruitage, and the charming mountains and rivers which embellish the earth, almost call upon us, with united voices, to give praise for the love and bountifulness of our merciful Father. But who could adequately depict the countless sources of happiness which God has created? And each and all of them are manifested to us as tokens of His goodness, when we come to believe, that He fashioned the universe of His own free will, and from the bountifulness of His nature. But the Naiyāyikas and Vaiśeshikas, having established it as a maxim, that all things are indebted for their origin to the works of souls, have overspread these glories with the blackness of gloom. And they have transformed God into a hard-natured huckster, who secures his pay from his customers,
and sells his wares by rigid tale, weight, and measure. So much for the description of the Supreme Being which we meet with in the two most reasonable of the Hindu Systems.
CHAPTER II

Examination of the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika Tenets relative to the Soul; namely, that it had no Beginning, that it is All-pervading, and that it takes Birth again and again.

Numerous are the faults of the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika, even in their account of the soul. Souls they hold to have existed from eternity, and to be, each, diffused throughout all space. I have already pointed out, that, if unoriginated existence be ascribed to any but God, His deity is impugned. I now purpose to consider the grounds on which souls are maintained, by the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika, to have existed always, and to be diffused everywhere. If we do not so believe, say the advocates of those systems, the soul must be perishable. As for existence from all duration, it is argued, that whatever had a beginning will have an end; as a jar, cloth, etc.; and, therefore, if a soul once began to be, it will some time cease to be.¹ But I would ask, "what foundation there is for the maxim, that all which has had a

¹ What the Hindus esteem to be the most unanswerable argument of the soul's eternity will be considered hereafter.
beginning shall have an end. Should it be replied, that the history of a jar, or the like, supplies foundation for it, I rejoin, that what may be predicated of jars and such-like material things is not on that account predicable of the soul; so great is their disparity. Moreover, the origin, continuance, and termination of anything depend solely upon the will of God. If it pleased God, could He not, by His infinite might, preserve a jar for ever and ever? By evidence\(^1\) which I do not here adduce, it is established, that human souls are immortal; and so it is evident, that it is the will of God, that they should be so. And can anything thwart His power to do as He wills to do? Can the aforesaid maxim of my opponents obstruct His infinite power? It is a great mistake, in them, to take up a maxim gratuitously, and then to wish to fetter with it the whole world, nay, God Himself, whether it be appropriate or inappropriate.

As a proof of the maxim of the pundits, that whatever had a beginning must have an end, it is alleged, that every originated substance is necessarily made up of parts,\(^2\) and that the parts of anything thus

\(^1\) It is not opportune, at this place, to indicate more distinctly than in this manner, the only certain warrant for believing in the soul’s immortality, namely, the Holy Scripture.

\(^2\) Dharmarāja Dīkshita, speaking of the internal organ, holds this language: न ताबद्वतःकरण निर्बलयां साधित्वण्वेन साध्व-यवतां | Vedānta-paribhāsha, p. 3. ‘The internal organ is not without parts: being an originated substance, it is made up of parts.’
constituted may come asunder, and so the thing will perish sometime. To this I have to say, as before, that all such suppositions are applicable to material things alone; and that the origination, continuance, and end of all things depend solely upon the will of God.

That the soul is all-pervading must also be believed, say the pundits, if we would consider it to be indestructible.\(^1\) According to them, dimension is of three descriptions; atomic, intermediate, and infinite. Atomic dimension is the last degree of minuteness. Intermediate dimension is that of a jar, of cloth, or of any originated substance whatsoever. However great it may be, it has limits. Infinite dimension the third kind is unlimited. It is this species of dimension which, the pundits teach, belongs to God, to souls, to ether,\(^2\) to time, and to

\(^1\) यदि च घटादिनवतः पुमान्त मूर्ति: परिच्छन्ति: हृदिक्षिते

तदा साध्यत्रविनाशितविदिना घटादिसमानात्मस्मीपत्तावपस्विद्वालतः

स्यादिद्विधोः। Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, p. 35. ‘And if it were acknowledged, that the soul is “limited”, or finite—like a jar and such other things—since, as is the case with these, it must possess the properties of having parts and of being destructible, the result would be a tenet contradictory to that of our system.’

Annam Bhatta says, speaking of ether: विमुलादेवादस्मवन्द्र

नित्यलम। Tarka-dīpikā, MS fol. 7, verso. ‘As being, like the soul, all-prevading it is, like it, eternal.’

\(^2\) A characterization of ākāśa will serve to show how inadequately it is represented by ‘ether’. In dimension, it is, as
space; and whatever has this dimension is all-pervading. Further, according to them, things of atomic or of infinite dimension are indestructible, but those of intermediate dimension cannot be indestructible.\(^1\)

A soul, then, to be indestructible, must needs be, in size, either atomic or infinite. If it be the first, then has been said, infinite; it is not made up of parts, and colour, taste, smell, and tangibility do not appertain to it. So far forth it corresponds exactly to time, space, Isvara, and soul. Its speciality, as compared therewith, consists in its being the material cause of sound. Except for its being so, we might take it to be one with vacuity.

In passing, this is, doubtless, the fifth element referred to in the following words of Megasthenes, as cited by Strabo: Πρὸς δὲ τοῖς τέταρτοις στοιχείοις πέμπτη τίς ἐστὶ φύσις, ἔξ ἢς οὔρανος καὶ τὰ ἀστρα.—Schwanbeck's Megasthenes Indica, p. 188.

\(^1\) Vijnāna Bhikshu says of the soul मध्यमपरिमाणले साव-यवलापत्वा विनाशितम् | Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāshya, p. 35. 'If it were of intermediate dimension it must be constituted of parts, and, therefore, would be destructible.'

The following also refers to the soul: न मध्यमपरिमाण: | तथा स्वनिष्ठालिङ्गक्रः स्ततनाशकङ्कात्मागमप्रसञ्जः | Tarka-dīpikā, MS fol. 8, verso. 'It is not of intermediate dimension. If it were so, from being uneternal, and hence perishable, there would follow the destruction of what is done, and the accession of what is not done.'

What is meant is this. The works of the soul are assumed to be inalienable and inevitable. On the theory, then, of the soul's perishableness, its works would miss of their effect, which, by the hypothesis, cannot thus fail. Further, newly created souls would reap fruit which they had not sown.
its qualities, as apprehension, will, etc., cannot be subject to immediate cognition; for there is another maxim, that the qualities of an atom—as, for instance, the colour or taste of earth in its atomic character—are incapable of being so cognized.\(^1\) It is, however, a fact of universal consciousness, that the qualities of the soul are cognized immediately; and hence the pundits are compelled, on their principles, to regard the soul as of infinite dimension. The reply which I gave at the end of the last paragraph is equally applicable in this place.

Another relevant objection that would offer itself to the pundits, is this. ‘If the soul be not all-pervading, but bounded by the body, it must vary in dimension as the body varies: and the same soul may, in one state of existence, inform an ant; in another, a human being; and, in a third, an elephant. Assuming the soul to be bounded by the body, it must be very minute in an ant; and, when it passes into a man, or into an elephant, how can it discharge

\[^1\text{सन्तोषशालात प्रक्षे च महत्स्य हेतुवात् मनसि ज्ञान-}\]

\[^2\text{सुखादिसत्वे तत्प्रक्ष्णानुपप्पन्तेतिविर्यः।}}\]

\(^1\) \textit{Siddhānta-muktāvahār, Bibliotheca Indica, Vol. IX, pp. 38–9. ‘Since the mind is atomic in dimension, and since grossness is essential in order to perception, if cognition, happiness, etc., had their seat in the mind, they would not be perceived, or immediately cognized.’}

A further objection, and one more ordinarily urged, against the hypothetical notion, that the soul is of atomic bulk, will be found in the words of the Sānkhyā and Vaiśeshika writers adduced in the second note forward.
its functions? And how can it take cognizance of the sense of feeling throughout such a bulk? For it cannot dilate so as to fill it.\(^2\) We must conclude, consequently, that the soul increases and diminishes with the increase and diminution of the body. And since, thus, from repeatedly increasing and diminishing, it undergoes alteration of constituent

\(^1\) Śankara Āchārya, in the passage about to be cited, is writing against the Baudhāyas, who, as he asserts, maintain, that the soul is commensurate with the body. शरीराणां चाचतन-वर्णितपरिमाणलाव मनुष्यजीवो मनुष्यशारीरपरिमाणो भुता पुनः फेनितक कमेविपाकैन हस्तिजन्म प्रामुखन्न न कुत्भं हृदित्व-शरीरं व्यामुखात पुतिकाजनम च प्रामुखन्न न कुत्भं: पुतिकाशरीरं समीयेत्। सा́रीका-सूत्रा-भाष्यः: the MS is not at hand for reference. ‘Since bodies are various in dimension, if a human soul—co-extensive, according to the Baudhāyas, with the human body—were, by a special maturation of works, to be born an elephant, it would fall short of filling the whole of an elephantine body, and, if born a bee, an apian body would be inadequate to contain it.’

\(^2\) Vijnāna Bhikshu and Annam Bhaṭṭa argue after the manner of the text, in opposition to the view, that the soul is atomic.

अणूंचे च देहव्यापिज्ञानाधनुपपत्ति:। सान्ख्या-प्रवचाणाया, p. 35. ‘And if the soul were atomic, there would be no accounting for cognition, etc., which extend all over the body.’

सच न परमाणुः शरीरव्यापिसुखानुपलब्धिप्रभुवत्।
Tarka-dīpikā, MS fol. 8, verso. ‘And it, the soul, is not an atom, as to size; else it would result, that pleasure would not be perceived throughout the body.’
parts, it follows, that it must repeatedly be generated and destroyed. for to undergo such alteration is, according to the Naiyāyikas, to be generated after having been destroyed.'

Now, for my part, I repudiate the notion of metempsychosis; and so I might hold myself dispensed here from returning answer to the pundits. Nevertheless, I reply to them; since the objection just detailed will recur. A human being has, in infancy, a body of small size as compared with what that body becomes subsequently. They will say, then, that, on my view of the soul's being bounded by the body, it must be, that the small soul of the infant becomes a large soul in the full-grown man; for the small soul of a small body could not take cognizance of the sense of feeling, for instance, from head to foot of a body greatly augmented in magnitude.\(^1\) To this I say, that, though one holds the soul to be bounded by the body, still it does not follow, of course, as an article of belief, that, in proportion as the body changes in size, so does the soul. When a child begins to grow, the apprehension and other faculties of his soul increase in strength; but it is not necessary to say, that his soul itself augments. And, when I allege, that the soul is bounded by the body, my meaning is not, that its

\(^1\) Such an objection is brought by Śankara Āchārya in continuation of his words quoted in the note before the last: समान एष एकस्मिन्निपि जन्मनि कौमार्योवनस्थाविरेषु दोषः। ‘The same objection applies even to the case of a state of existence taken by itself, in its several stages of childhood, middle age, and senescence.'
dimension tallies exactly with that of the body. I simply intend, that the soul does not reside beyond the body. As for its nature, that is most hard to understand; and no one, in fact, can give a full description of it. That the soul takes cognizance of the sense of touch in all the parts of a body, small or great, is nothing difficult to it; for, in its operations, it subsidizes all the sense-organs; and its power of apprehension is more or less in proportion to the vigour of those organs. Thus, a man whose sight is impaired sees ill; and, when it is improved, he sees better. In like manner, tact is apprehended through the nerves; and these increase with the body; and, through them, there is apprehension of tact throughout the parts of the body, whether it be small or great.

The truth is, that the nature of the soul transcends our knowledge, and does not lend itself to description. All that we know of the soul is, that it is something which possesses apprehension, will, and other qualities. More than this we cannot affirm concerning it; as, for instance, that, like earth, water, and other material substances, it has dimension and such like qualities. Much, therefore, that is predicable of a jar, of cloth, and of other material substances, is not to be predicated of the soul. Such, however, is the disposition of the pundits, that they refuse to consider what things are within the reach of our understanding, and what things lie beyond. They would fain to take the visible and the invisible, God and souls included, and measure them, and turn them round and over, and pry into them, and at last get their complete
quiddities inside their fist. To their minds, if one is to know anything, one should know everything: otherwise, it is better to know nothing. And so they wander on in the wilderness of vain inquiry. I would remind them, that, be the essence of the soul of what sort soever, its origin, duration, and end are in subordination to the will of God; and, therefore, if God thinks good that the soul shall exist for ever, it can in no wise incur destruction.

But the weightiest reason, in the estimation of the pundits, for arguing, that the soul has existed from all eternity, is as follows. First, they argue, that the doctrine of metempsychosis must be accepted. Otherwise, the imputation of partiality and cruelty must attach to God. Partiality consists in not looking upon all alike; in treating some with more favour, and others with less; in giving some a high rank, and others a lower. Cruelty is uncompassionateness; the giving pain where no fault has been committed. Now, we see, that, in this world, some enjoy a high rank and great power, and others are wretched, and afflicted with poverty: and what is the reason, that God has ordered it thus? Again, almost all men suffer misery and misfortune; and what is the cause of this? It is not enough to say, it is the sins that have been done in the current state of existence; for it is matter of experience, that many a grievous offender has great power and pleasure, and that many a man whose conduct is observably meritorious is oppressed with poverty and pain. And what can you say with respect to infants and beasts? Consciously they have never committed sin; and yet they suffer greatly. Hence,
we maintain the doctrine of the transmigration of the soul, and so remove all these difficulties. We can, therefore, say, when we see a bad man to be powerful and in comfort, that he must have been eminently virtuous in a former state of existence, and is now reaping the reward of his virtue. Similarly, when we see a good man suffer more than ordinary affliction, we are able to affirm, that, in a former state of existence he was eminently sinful, and is now receiving retribution for his sin. And, in like manner, infants and beasts undergo punishment for the offences of which, in a prior birth, they were guilty. A single former state of being will not suffice, however; as the good and evil experienced therein must likewise be accounted for by the works of a birth that preceded. Moreover, the getting a body is also a consequence of works;¹ and, therefore, as often as a soul is invested in a body, antecedent works must be postulated in connexion with it. We hold, therefore, that the vicissitude of works and births, the alternate production of each from the other, has been going on from time without beginning.

¹ स हि धर्मादिनिनित्तप्रभवः | Tattva-kaumudi, p. 43.

‘For this obtaining a body is due to merit and the like, as causes.’

पूर्वकुलत्स्य यागदानहिंसादेः फलस्य धर्मविधमेवप्रस्यानुबन्धात्
सहकारिभावात् तत्स्य श्रोतस्योपत्तिः | Nyāya-sūtra-vritti, p. 180. ‘“The production” of “that,” i.e. of the body, is “owing to the aid,” or co-operation of merit and demerit, “the fruit of foredone” sacrifices, donations, harm, etc.’
I reply, that, neither by this reasoning can the soul be proved never to have originated. Even if I admitted the truth of what you have alleged touching the present facility of some bad men, etc., and metempsychosis as an explanation thereof, still I should not feel myself under any compulsion to argue, that souls have always existed, and that birth and death have had place from a foregone eternity. The difficulties above mentioned would all be repelled, if it were maintained, that, in the beginning, souls were created by God; originally in a state of happiness, but condemned, by reason of sin, to repeated embodiment. But to say, as you do, that works must be taken to have been done prior to the body—for that the having a body is the consequence of works—is in the last degree unreasonable. Your maxim, that every effect must have for its cause the works of souls, I have previously exploded; for effects follow from free will of God. But the pundits say, that the body is intrinsically an abode or site of misery,¹ and hence is itself a misery. Out of the twenty and one miseries enumerated by the Naiyāyikas, this is one. If, then, God invests a soul with a body, irrespectively of works, He does injustice. My reply is, that the body is not, intrinsically, an abode of misery. On the

¹ न च सशीरस्य सत: प्रियाप्रियसंस्पर्शो वारपितं शक्यः।
Śankara Āchārya on the Brahma-sūtra, Bibliotheca Indica, No. 89, p. 115. 'And the contact, with one who is embodied, of good and evil cannot be prevented.'

The शरीरस्य of the printed edition has been changed, on manuscript authority, as above.
contrary, not a little happiness is derived by means of it; and, as for the pain caused by the body, owing to illness, etc., it is in the power of God to remove it. If He so willed, He might preserve us constantly at ease, though in the body. How crude here also is the reasoning of the pundits! Those who follow the Nyāya and Vaiśeshika, hold, that God exists. Still, when they argue upon other points than His existence, they seem to forget that He exists, and, as it were, refer all things to a law of chance. For the ground of their doctrine, that misery inevitably accompanies the body, is, that they everywhere see such to be the fact; and hence they infer, that it is its nature to be so accompanied, and that God could not make it to be otherwise. In like manner do they err in their maxim, that nothing which has had a beginning can be indestructible. Thus to think will be made out to be proper, when we are convinced, that the course of nature is fortuitous, and subject to some blind law. If, however, God is Governor of the course of nature, all things spring from His will. Some things are perishable, because He wills them to be so; and, for the same reason, other things are imperishable. In like manner, we men suffer misery, because it has been decreed fit, in His unfathomable and incomprehensible counsel, that thus it should be. If He thought good, it would not be at all difficult for Him to cause, that, though clothed with bodies, we should constantly remain happy. Indeed, it is manifest, from the true word of God, that, when man was in a state of sinlessness, he was entirely exempt from misery.
Neither did sickness, nor sorrow, nor death befall him; nay, the body was, to him, a door to many felicities. Only since he became a sinner has he been subject to the countless griefs of the soul and of the body. Earth, water, air, and all other external objects, were, in the beginning, sources, to him, of happiness only, and afterwards became sources of misery. The doctrine, therefore, of the pundits, that to abide in the body is intrinsically misery, is in every wise erroneous.

The refutation which I have detailed, of the notion of an unoriginated succession of works and births of souls, has proceeded on grounds maintained by my opponents. For, as regards myself, I reject the doctrine of metempsychosis; and I account as inadequate all the reasons that they bring forward in support of it.¹ With respect to the first defect which, according to them, has place, if metempsychosis be rejected, namely, partiality in God, I reply thus. If you simply mean, that He has not bestowed upon

¹ This argument against the metempsychosis, however drawn out, will not seem to be gratuitously diffuse, if one but takes these three facts into consideration: first, that the doctrine here impeached is all but ineradicably rooted in the mind of every pundit; secondly, that, in the estimation of the pundits, any religious economy which does not acknowledge it is almost self-evidently false in its very first principles; and thirdly, and by way of consequence, that the rejection of it by Christianity is, to them, a wellnigh insuperable obstacle to their acceptance of the Gospel. The writer, in here combating a favourite and fundamental dogma, has with his best thought and diligence, selected and marshalled his reasons in such a manner as is, he apprehends, best calculated to impress the minds of his erring countrymen, and to win them towards the truth.
all men equality of rank and happiness, your objection has no weight with me: since I hold, that it was to show forth His all-sufficient attributes, that God framed the world; and that He creates souls irrespectively of works; and that He makes them diverse, as exhibiting the manifoldness of His creation. For instance, there are souls of one kind, in the form of angels, who surpass man, by far, in rank, majesty, wisdom, power, and other particulars. Inferior to them is man; and, again, below him are other creatures, such as beasts. These varieties we know of; but who shall say how many more different grades there may not be in God's vast universe? Again, there are distinct orders of angels; and of mankind also the ranks are numerous. All alike are the creation of God's free will; and, if He has given a high place to one, and a humble place to another, has any one a claim on Him? If we, who were once nothing, have, on receiving existence, been given anything whatever, it is from God's mere mercy. And can this mercy become injustice, from His giving another more than He gives me? If any one gives a poor man ten rupees, the man thinks himself greatly indebted to the giver. But, if the donor gives a hundred rupees to another poor man, does his favour towards the first turn to no favour? Does he prove himself unjust? I am aware, that, our nature having become corrupted by sin, almost any man, if he sees that others are favoured beyond himself, takes it ill, and is jealous and unhappy. But this unhappiness arises from the fact, that his nature is corrupt; and there is no right ground for
it. There is no injustice, then, in giving less to one, and more to another. If, indeed, all had a claim to receive equally, there would be injustice. No one, however, has any claim upon God.

But now you may say, that, though there is no injustice in bestowing mean rank or small power on one, and high rank or great power on another, yet is there not injustice in causing pain gratuitously? And how many great sinners are happy, and how many good men are miserable! As for infants and beasts, too, who have never sinned, do not they suffer much affliction? Pray, how are these things to be accounted for? I reply. Without doubt, the fruit of sin is misery; and, as all men are sinners, it is meet, that, being so, they should be miserable. There are some men whom we call good, but, in the sight of God, they are all guilty, for God and man behold things under very different aspects. From sin, the discernment of man has become blunted; and the heinousness of sin is not altogether clear to him. Some men are called good, simply because they are better than most others. And yet there is not, in all the world, even one man whose heart and nature are undefiled by sin. Those, therefore, whom we call good are, before a most holy God, guilty, and deserving of punishment.

Moreover, mark, that this world is not man’s place of judgement. Full judgement will not be till after death; and not till then will each receive exact and complete requital for his deeds. The present world, like a school, is a place where man is disciplined; and the happiness or misery which we here experience is
not always by way of requital, or, when so, proportioned to our actions. In most cases, God sends happiness and misery to men, as being calculated for their good; but, to us, it is impossible to decide what is for any one's good, or the reverse. For none of us can know another's heart and nature, and his history, past, present, and future, and the eventual result of his happiness or misery. Should we, then, pronounce all misery in this world to be evil, we should err greatly. We ought, rather, to consider misery to be sent to us, in this world, by God, in mercy, for our warning, that we may turn to Him, and so escape future punishment. Therefore, to entertain doubt as to God's justice, because of the distresses of this world, is most rash. If a man who has been blindly walking in the path of sin, has his heart opened by some great calamity, and takes warning, repents, and turns to God, must he not look upon that calamity as a great blessing from God; and will he not praise God for it all his life long?

And do not suppose, that men of proper life and of amiable disposition have no need of the discipline which is furnished by misery. They too commit many an error, and have many a defect. And often it so occurs, that he who is a chosen servant of God is especially visited with affliction, not for punishment, but to the end, that he may be tried, like gold, in the crucible of misery, and thereby be purified. What folly, then, to let the idea of evil be suggested, whenever one hears the name of misery, and, with one's feeble intellect, to decide as to its hidden causes!
It is often wondered, why, if there was no former state of existence, some persons are born blind, and others are born lame. God has made many men thus, while he has made many of whole body. And it is asked, whether there be not partiality in this. But what are we, to attempt to find out the secret counsel of God! Can we learn the heart, and nature, and all the external and internal condition of another? Who shall say what good may not accrue to the immortal souls of the lame and blind, from their few days of misery? It is very true, that, though God, in His great mercy, sends us various remedial miseries for the eternal benefit of our souls, still, so infatuated are we with sin, that most of us refuse to take warning from our misery, and to repent of our sins, and to turn to God. The fault is our own, however. As for God's dealing, it is mercy. Is it not written even in one of the books of Hindus, 'From him whom I would favour, by little and little do I take away the riches'?  

It remains for me to speak of the misery of infants and beasts. And here, entering upon a strict logical argument, I would ask the Hindu: Is it certain, that the suffering of souls can have no just cause but their offences? When a man commits a great state-crime, the king has him executed, and confiscates his property. As a consequence, and even though they may have taken no part in the crime, his children and household are involved in extreme distress. But

1 यस्यास्मातनृगुहामि हरिष्ये तद्दनं श्रावे: ।
This half-couplet is from the Bhāgavata-purāṇa, x. 88, 8.
does any one, for this, call the king unjust? Or take this case. The king's subjects are in every way loyal, and their sovereign is perfectly satisfied with them. But an enemy comes to attack him. He orders his people to give him their aid; and thousands of them suffer greatly, or are slain, and that, although they have not offended against their lord, but, on the contrary, have always obeyed him. Now tell me, whether the king did any injustice in sending them to war. Take a third illustration. A king entrusted his son to a pundit, to be instructed. The pundit was very learned and expert; and the prince, on his part, was of a good disposition, laborious, and heedful of his teacher's directions. The teacher initiated him in every branch of learning. When the prince became a thorough scholar, the pundit took him to the king, whom he addressed as follows: 'Sire, I have taught your son all things but one. That one thing is most necessary, in my opinion; but I cannot teach it to him, till I have your promise of pardon.' 'Why do you speak thus?' replied the king. 'In securing your services, I count myself most fortunate; and I made over my son to you; and I am sure, that whatever you propose to do must be for his good.' 'Very well,' said the pundit, 'let a horse be saddled.' When the horse was brought, the pundit mounted, and called out to the prince. The prince drew near; upon which the pundit laid his whip over him smartly, and spurred on his horse, telling the prince to run along with him. The king, seeing this, was at his wits' ends, hastened after the pundit, and begged him to tell what it all meant. The pundit reined in his horse, and thus made
answer, 'Pardon me, Sire, for what I have done. I wish only good to your son; and, in my opinion, it was most necessary to teach him the one thing I have now taught him. For he is a prince; and he was altogether ignorant of the pain of being beaten and of violent exertion. He knew it only by name, as he had never tasted it. On coming to the throne, how could he have realized the sufferings of others? And, if any one offended, how, when awarding punishment to him, could the thought have presented itself to his mind, of leaning to tenderness and to mercy? These attributes are, however, necessary to a good king; and what I have done was done with a view that he might not be without them.' Now, observe, that the prince had done no wrong in his relations with the pundit; and yet no one would charge the pundit with doing injustice in occasioning him pain. And, if a foolish man, ignorant of the pundit's motive, on seeing this strange scene from a distance, had said to himself, that either the prince must have been guilty of some grave fault, or else the pundit was most unjust, what rashness and want of consideration would such an inference have manifested! But do not understand me to mean, that the actions of the king and of the teacher, in these illustrations, afford exact parallels to the ways of God; or that the subjects, whose misery was caused by their king, and the situation of the prince, are altogether like the condition of infants and beasts; or that the fruit of the misery of them all is of the same character. I pray you not thus to misapprehend me; for it often happens, in controversy, that from not seizing the drift of one's opponent,
one takes words that fall from him, otherwise than as he intended them, and then blames him for opinions which he does not entertain. Do not deal by me in this way. Understand, that my design, in adducing these illustrations, is simply to refute the notion of its being an established fact, that, when misery befalls any one, it must be referred to his offences against the author of his suffering, and admits of no other explanation. I have only wished to show the baselessness of this your maxim. The inference of a former state of existence, in the case of children, from observing that they experience suffering, can have no ground but that maxim; and, if the maxim is shown to be false, the inference built upon it is so likewise. As for the illustrations of the king and pundit, perhaps you will allege, that they do not go to disprove your maxim, that suffering presupposes sin; inasmuch as, according to your system, the persons who, though they had not offended against the king and the pundit, suffered pain from them, received therein the retribution of sins done in a former birth; and so their offences are made out to have been the cause of their pain, and your maxim stands intact. I have to reply, that you have not exactly taken in the intent of my illustrations. If the persons in question had sinned in a former birth, they must have been offenders in the sight of God. What I meant was, that they had not offended against the king and the pundit; and yet the king and the pundit, though bringing suffering on them, cannot be called unjust. If there could be no proper reason, other than offences against the causers of suffering, for causing suffering to others,
the king and the pundit were certainly unjust. When any one, without due cause, brings about the death of another, even then, suitably to your view, he who dies reaps, in his death, the fruit of the sins of a foregone birth: and is the person who took his life, on that account, guiltless? In conclusion, my illustrations certainly prove, that there may be an adequate cause, other than offences against him who inflicts suffering, to which suffering may be referred; and, by consequence, your maxim is baseless.

As concerns the fearful punishment which every evil-doer must suffer in the world to come, that maxim is, indeed, correct; but there is no satisfactory and convincing proof of it with reference to the frivolous distresses we suffer in this transitory life. Be assured, also, that the sufferings of infants and beasts, though to the onlooker they seem terrible, are very trivial in comparison with those of a person of full consciousness; for we know, with certainty, that, the less the consciousness, the less the pain. In fact, very likely a father and mother, when they see their infant in pain, suffer more than the infant itself. As for its pain, though we may see no fruit coming from it now, still you may be sure, that God sent it for some most good and salutary end; such an end, that, when it becomes known to us, we shall confess, that the misery from the pain is of no account whatever, as weighed against the consequent benefit.

Again, we learn, from the true word of God, that the chief and primary cause of the entrance of pain into this world was sin; and that all misery has immediate or mediate connexion with
man's bad deeds, or with his evil nature, which is the seed of ill-doing. Nevertheless, I affirm that, so deep and so far transcending understanding are the ways of Almighty God, and in such a manner does He, in His inscrutable wisdom, educe various results from every single thing He does, that, assuredly, we cannot say, when a soul receives pain in this world, that such pain can have no just cause but in the sin that soul has committed. Many and many a just cause may it have, of which our feeble understanding can know nothing. How hasty is it, therefore, for us, when we contemplate the sufferings of beasts, or of children, or of any other creature, to make up our minds, forthwith, that they had a former birth, and that they were then guilty of sin! To establish such strange doctrines, satisfactory and convincing evidence is necessary. It is manifest, that metempsychosis is most improbable. Hindus, because they have constantly heard of it from their childhood, look upon it as not improbable. Still, in reality, it is exceedingly improbable; and it does not deserve instant credit, that we have been in existence, times innumerable, and from duration without beginning, as gods, men, elephants, horses, dogs, cats, monkeys, mice, scorpions, and centipedes. What scenes we must have passed through, of which we have not, now, even the faintest remembrance! If it be replied, that, as we who are grown up have forgot many circumstances of our childhood and adolescence, so we have forgot the circumstances of our former births, I would ask, whether, in those so many births, we were always like children. Moreover, though we forget many things
that passed in our adolescence, there are thousands of other things, belonging to that stage of life, which remain in our memories all our lives long. Should it be replied, that, not altogether inconceivably, at the time of each new birth, we must forget the transactions of the former birth, I assent. But there are many things that are not altogether impossible, which, yet, we are unable at once to believe. Is it wholly impossible, that wings should sprout out of an elephant, and that he should soar up into the clouds? At the same time, if any one should come and tell us, that he had seen such a thing, we should scarcely credit him off hand. Only on his producing the most indubitable evidence of the truth of what he was asserting, should we believe him; not otherwise. For, in proportion as a thing is extraordinary, we require strong proof of it. And, inasmuch as metempsychosis is in the highest degree improbable, and is supported by no satisfactory and convincing evidence, I cannot accept it; your maxim, that suffering presupposes sin, and cannot else be accounted for, being altogether impotent. In my foregoing illustrations I have shown, that suffering may have other just causes. Consider, too, that the king and the pundit, in those illustrations, are infinitely surpassed, by the Deity, in amplitude and profundity of counsel. Where there is one reason to justify an act of a king, who can say how many there may not be to justify any one act of God? Can you, indeed, find out the whole mind of God, and say, with assurance, in respect of any particular, that such or such is the cause of it, and that it can have no other cause? Countless are the things in this world,
of which we cannot in the least discover the purpose: and will you therefore conclude, that they exist without a purpose? Who can tell the bounds of God's wide and complicated universe? And, as for the innumerable things which constitute it, who can point out the hidden cause of each, or its result, or its countless relations to other things? God, keeping in view all this, created the whole, and controls it. Of this whole we see but a very small portion of a part; and yet, when anything in it seems otherwise than suits us, we begin to raise objections to it. But God, who beholds all, and who knows how everything in it relates to everything else, and the result of each thing, and what consequences will finally flow from all things taken collectively, knows, that whatever He has made is in every wise good, and is assigned to its proper place.

When a cultivator casts his precious seed into the dust, and presses it down, if a foolish man were to ask him why he was destroying it, would he not smile, and tell him to wait a little, and he would see, that the seed had not been destroyed, but would turn to great profit? Be advised, that, in like manner, God has made this world for some most excellent end. At present, we are unable to perceive what it is; and some things seem to us to be reversed, and others to be useless, and even wrong. The laws by which God governs the world, and His reasons for them, are so deep, that not only we, but even the angels, stand confounded before them. The foundations of His counsel have been laid in time that had no beginning; and its pinnacle, so to speak, pierces
the remotest futurity. Know, however, of a surety, that all things will conspire to a final result, such as shall make manifest His supereminent glory and His supremely love-worthy attributes.

But the pundits do not take these things into their consideration. All the actions and plans of God they treat as if they were those of a man. They cannot realize, that the counsels and the ways of God are far beyond our understanding—so far beyond it, that, search as we may, we can never find them out. Nor can they believe, that there are, in God's world, things past computation, of which we know not the causes, and of which there are, nevertheless, numerous and just causes, known to God. And hence they would settle everything by their own poor judgement; and hence they arbitrarily postulate maxims and dogmas. In this lies the root of all their errors. Be persuaded, I entreat you, to quit this most faulty method. If you learn the right method, you shall never go astray. When you have to reason on any matter pertaining to God, first of all consider what things are within the scope of our understanding; and reason on them alone. As for what transcends our understanding, to be silent regarding it, is a token of wisdom. Who knows but God has kept back from us the causes of many things in His creation, expressly with a view to teach us humility, and to discipline our faith in Him? Indeed, a chief mark of piety is this: that, though many things relating to God seem to us not only to have no obvious causes, but even—such is our short sight—to be improper, we should yet bow our heads, and confess, with
unwavering faith, that they are all most excellent and right. In so doing, our humility and the firmness of our faith are put to the test. When a given thing is referred to God, we must first ascertain, whether it be correctly so referred: if correctly, of course our humble belief in it is justified. Such belief is not, however, binding upon us with regard to what is written of God in your Vedas and Purānas; for it is not proved, that what is there said of God belongs to Him. On the contrary, thousands of proofs render it most indubitable, that those books were the invention of men. Whatever things we see before us in God’s creation—the sufferings of children, for instance,—are from God, without doubt; and these, as I have said, we are to believe, with humility, to be most excellent and right.

The Naiyāyika dogma of the existence of the soul from eternity appears, further, as a great error, in that it detracts from the real relation in which the soul stands to God, and from the consequent duties which it owes to God. If I believe, that God created both my soul and body, and that my continuance in life, and whatever I have, are from Him, I must regard Him as having complete authority over me; and it is seen to be my duty to love and to honour Him with all my soul and strength, and to remain entirely His. But, if a man believes that his soul is self-existent, and that whatever he receives from God is the fruit of his own works, he must consider God’s authority over his soul to be very partial; and, as a result, the duty of his soul to love and to honour God must likewise be partial.
CHAPTER III

Examination of the Cause, laid down in the Nyāya, Vaiṣeshika, and the other Systems, of the Wretchedness of the Soul, that is, its Bondage, and the Means of escaping therefrom; a Succinct Description of the True Nature of Virtue and Vice; and a Criticism of the Views of the Systematists touching Virtue and Vice, their Consequences, etc.

Now, other things with which we ought to acquaint ourselves are, the wretchedness of the soul, the cause of this wretchedness, and the means of getting rid of it. On these topics there are very many errors in what we find in the Nyāya, Vaiṣeshika, and others among the Systems. All the Systematists concede, that all men are wretched; their wretchedness consisting in metempsychosis and the resultant suffering. It is not this, in my belief, that constitutes man’s wretchedness: and yet his real wretchedness is far more terrible than any of that nature. But this point I will not pursue. Let me ask the Systematists, what is the cause of human wretchedness. They allege, that it is misapprehension—the identifying oneself with one’s body and so forth. And, if I wish to know what harm, in their opinion, comes of this, they tell
me, that the identifying the body with the soul originates desire and aversion, from which spring good and evil works, whence arise merit and demerit, to reap the fruits of which follow repeated births, Elysium, Hell, happiness, and misery; and that such is human wretchedness. All this wretchedness they think the soul can escape from, and then be liberated, on its coming to know itself to be diverse from the body, etc. A full account of this has been given in the second chapter of the first section. All the dogmas of the Systematists on this topic contain grave errors; and I shall consider those dogmas, one by one, in the present chapter. The matter before us, I implore the reader to remember, is most concerning. It is to the salvation of our priceless souls that it relates; and it should be pondered with freedom from partiality, and with patience and fixedness of attention.

There must be very few who regard the body and soul as altogether one. In general, men know and believe, that the soul, which is intelligent, and the body, which is unintelligent, are of different substances. All men, however, you declare, in saying 'I am dark', or 'I am fair', evidence, that they labour under misapprehension. I reply, that such locations do not betoken misapprehension. For, though the soul and the body are different as to substance, yet God has established so close a connexion between them, that, as it were, the two make up one, and we call both together man. When, therefore, a man says 'I', he does not mean his soul only; nor does he mean his body only; but the two. He may predicate of himself things which pertain solely to the body, as when he
says, 'I am dark, or fair'; and so of things which belong only to the soul, as when he says, 'I am conscious, or ignorant'; but this does not prove him unaware, that his soul is distinct from his body. It is true, that a man sometimes seems to identify his wealth, or the like, with himself, and, when he loses his property, says, 'I am lost.' But does any one really believe, that a man who so expresses himself actually regards his property as one with his soul? And again, since, of the body and soul, the soul is chief and the more excellent, a man sometimes speaks as though he were soul only, as when he says, 'my body', or 'I shall leave the body'. Baseless, therefore, is the opinion of those who maintain, on the ground of such phrases as 'I am black', and 'I am fair', that men labour under great misapprehension—a misapprehension which gives rise to all their wretchedness.

Again, though some men may be so ignorant as to identify the soul and body, still, they are not enabled, by being taught their separateness, to escape from good and bad works. The pundits, however, may argue, that a conviction of their separateness is necessarily operative of such escape. 'For, when a man

1 The sense of the original has here been preserved at the cost of compromising idiom.

2 It is singular, that the pundits adduce locutions similar to those in the text, to prove the direct opposite. When, they allege, a man whose son is prosperous says, 'I am prosperous', it is proved, that the man, through ignorance, regards himself as strictly and in fact identical with his son. See the Vedānta-sāra, p. 14; and the extract from Śankara Āchārya, at p. 10.

3 This argument has not been met with; nor does the author suppose that a pundit would be likely to employ it. It has
knows, that his soul is separate from his body, he must also believe, that the soul will not perish with the body, but will continue to exist after death, and will receive the requital of its good or evil works. And, when he reflects, that, in order to receive such requital, he must fall into Hell, or go to Elysium; and that even the happiness of Elysium is alloyed by various kinds of misery; and that, after all, when his desert is exhausted, the very happiness which was enjoyed becomes a source of misery; and that successive births and deaths must follow, and various sorts of happiness and misery be experienced; how great is the wretchedness! And, when, from heed to the numerous admonitions of the scriptures, the vanity of all the happiness of this world and of the next becomes clear to him, he will assuredly grow averse from both virtue and vice, and will estrange himself equally from good works and from evil.' I reply, that the expectation of his doing so is vain. As I have said already, the generality of men know, that the soul is distinct from the body. Interrogate even a very ignorant man, and he will tell you, that he looks to receiving, after death, the fruit of his deeds. But does this prospect keep him from good and evil works? Perhaps you will say, that the ignorant are, indeed, informed about this matter, but do not seriously reflect upon it; and hence they do not rid themselves of

been brought forward, and answered, to meet possible contingencies. The Hindu theory is, that the intuition of the soul's separateness from the body and so forth, has the effect of extirpating desire and aversion, and so of conducing to emancipation. See p. 35, seq.
desire and aversion. If, nevertheless, they received instruction, and meditated on the subject, why would they not so rid themselves? To this I have to say, that it becomes evident, if we thoroughly study the condition of human nature, that no labour such as you have spoken of is enough to root out desire and aversion altogether. And here I must observe, that, to count both good works and evil works a cause of bondage is, to my mind, wholly wrong. A little further on I shall expose the error of the pundits on this point. As for evil works, they are really a cause of bondage. Most necessary is it to avoid them; and even the consideration of the future punishment which they entail ought to induce men to avoid them. But, alas! so corrupt is the nature of man, that, let him reflect however much, yet he cannot, on that account, abandon bad works entirely. Your solicitude to shun good works is quite superfluous; for, so corrupt is the nature of man, that, let his works be ever so good, still there cleaves to them much of evil and imperfection; and he is incapable of a single good work wrought with purity of body, speech, and heart. For good works, a man may receive praise from his fellow-men; but, in the sight of God, who knows everything without and within, these very works are tainted with evil. Know, then, that miserable man of himself forbears good works: there is no need of pointing out the way to avoid them. But to escape from evil works is impossible by any human device. Suppose that one avoids practical theft, murder, adultery, contention, injustice, and so forth: yet is this the avoidance of all evil works? Not at all. The whole duty of man
consists in two things: to love God with all his heart, soul, and strength; and to love his fellow-men as he loves himself. To do contrariwise, or to do less, is sin. He who does his whole duty must never offend in either of the two things I have specified. And who can thus never offend? Most men are unaware of their secret faults, which lie hidden from them; and, on the ground of certain visible good works, they hug themselves on their goodness. But, if a man habitually explores, with the lamp of discrimination, that gloomy crypt, the dark dungeon of his heart, and looks into all the corners, and weighs all his thoughts, words, and deeds, he perceives, all too plainly, that he is a vile, fallen, weak, and helpless sinner. Countless are the instances of secret pride, hypocrisy, deceit, selfishness, and other blemishes, not to be described, that he will discover in himself; and the conviction will be forced upon him, that he does not love God as he ought. Such is the state of man. And be assured, that no man will be saved by right apprehension, or by works, but only by the free grace of God, the means of obtaining which are indicated in the real word of God.

Again, you yourselves acknowledge, that even he who has attained to fulness of right apprehension—whom you call saved-in-life—goes on, so long as he is in the body, doing good and bad works; for you hold that the accumulated works of the rightly apprehensive man are destroyed, and that his current works are inoperative. By this it is proved, that he does works which, but for his right apprehension, would have produced merit and demerit—that is to say,
good works and bad. How, then, is it established, that misapprehension is the cause of all works? And what turns out to be the difference between a man of right apprehension and one of wrong apprehension? You may allege, that there is this great difference, that the good and evil works of the misapprehensive man serve to fetter him, and that the rightly apprehensive man cannot be fettered by his works. The fallacy of this I shall lay bare in due course.

Another, and a greater, error on this point, into which the Systematists fall, is, in saying that virtue itself enthrals the soul. Vice does so, to be sure; but how can virtue? The fact is, that the Systematists do not understand aright the nature of virtue and that of vice; and on this account they go astray so variously. This being the case, I shall first briefly set forth the true nature of virtue and that of vice, and then treat of the errors just adverted to.

God created man a moral creature; capable of knowing God, and his own relations to God and the world; and capable of honouring and of loving God, his Creator and Lord, and of discharging his duties towards his fellow-creatures. And this capacity also he possesses, of knowing, that to do these things is right, and that to do the reverse is wrong. By a moral creature I mean one who answers this description. And now understand, that, man being a moral creature, certain things, in respect of his rank and nature, are, of themselves, binding on him, such as devotion, justice, truth, compassion, and the like;
while other things are, of themselves, wrong for him, such as atheism, injury to others, uncompassion, falsehood, and so forth. The former are virtue, and the latter are vice. Now, God, in His essential character, is good and just. Consequently, any action proper for man is, in itself, pleasing to Him; and any that is improper is displeasing to Him: and, inasmuch as He is just by nature, He must show favour to the virtuous, and award punishment to the wicked.

Three points are to be kept in view. First, God has not established, without cause and at haphazard, the distinction between virtue and vice; but He has fixed that to be virtue, which is binding on men with respect to their nature and rank, and that to be vice, which is wrong for them. Hence, in no circumstances is it right for man to commit sin; and in no circumstances is it wrong, or unnecessary, for him to do what is right. Secondly, God's favour to the virtuous, and His punishment of the wicked, are not because He receives aught of benefit from our virtue, or aught of injury from our sin. His requital of us is solely because of the justice of His nature. For it is of the essence of justice to reward the virtuous for their rectitude, and to inflict pain on the vicious for their wickedness. If God did not do thus, He would not be just; and imperfection would attach to His superlatively excellent and perfect nature. Thirdly, it is not the case, that the good and bad consequences which follow virtue and vice spring spontaneously from works. God has appointed those consequences.
Such are vice and virtue, and their consequences. But the understanding of man, when it became blind to the justice, holiness, and other attributes of God, got confused as to virtue and vice, and took to inventing a variety of perverse doctrines about them. Such has been, not exceptionally, the history of the Systematists. Of the grounds of the laws of virtue, and vice, on which I have touched, they know nothing. Otherwise, they would not speak of both virtue and vice as causes of bondage; nor would they pronounce, that he who wishes for emancipation should be alike free from the one and from the other.

The reason why the Systematists hold virtue to be a cause of bondage is this. Good works, they say, hinder the soul of emancipation: for emancipation consists in the soul's independence of the body, mind, apprehension, will, etc.; but good works, in order to reap the fruits appertaining to them, compel the soul, until this end is accomplished, to wear the form of a God, or of a man, or such like. Moreover, happiness, the fruit of good works, is beneath the ambition of a wise man; it being implicated, in two ways, with misery. In the first place, it is fugacious: since whatever has a beginning must have an end; and the fruit of virtue, like other things that have not always existed, must pass away. When a man obtains happiness, he is happy; but, when the happiness comes to a period, there supervenes misery: and so happiness itself amounts to misery. In the second place, there is inequality in the fruit of virtue; that is to say, he whose virtue is inconsiderable is
meagrely rewarded, while he whose virtue is more abundant receives a larger recompense. The former must repine at seeing the latter; and thus his very happiness makes him wretched. In this way all happiness whatsoever partakes of the character of misery; and hence, to be freed from both, and to become insensible, is the most transcendent aspiration of humanity.

But how erroneous is all this! God, I have shown, has appointed those things to be good works, which, in respect of the nature of man, are incumbent on him, and, for forbearing to do which, man, in the eye of justice, deserves punishment. Can, then, the fruit of those works which are incumbent on man, ever be evil? In your opinion, since the wish for the fruit of good works, happiness, misbeseems a man of prudence, that fruit is an evil. Again, since you maintain, that the true well-being of the soul consists in its parting with apprehension and will, and in becoming insensible, you ought rather to consider this state to be the fruit of virtue. Herein you have exactly inverted things. What! has God enacted the law of virtue and vice after the manner of a net, with no reason but to entangle souls in it, like so many birds, and to divert Himself withal? Has He fixed at random, that some works are bad, and that others are good, so that souls may sometimes be entrapped in one snare, and sometimes in the other? But, if God, simply because of His just and excellent nature, has established those works to be virtuous, which, in respect of the nature of the soul, are incumbent on it, will not He—a sea of
mercy and goodness, and Who, as the Father of all, desires the welfare of all, nay, Who devises a way and a means for the welfare of even such as do what is amiss—give to such as do what is right, that which will constitute their true well-being? Instead of well-being, will He, indeed, decree to such a soul a recompense to its harm? The fact is, however, that the attainment of a state of insensibility is not true emancipation; and they who, by God's mercy, arrive at true emancipation, will suffer no injury in their faculties, as those of apprehension and will. This I shall show further on.

Again, you mistake in arguing, that the fruit of virtue, happiness, is perishable. I have already made out your maxim to be utterly baseless—that all products must, as such, come to an end. Further, if perishable happiness is of the nature of misery, it cannot be the fruit of virtue; for, since that which it is obligatory on man to do is virtue, will God requite with misery him who does what is obligatory? You think, too, that virtue is a thing which is to be done for only a limited time, after which, it being discontinued, the reward follows. Hence your fear, that the reward also will, after a time, be discontinued. As I have said, however, virtue is a thing which it is perpetually incumbent on man to do, whether he be in this world, or in another. As long as he has being, so long should he go on practising virtue. While he continues in virtue, its beneficent requital will ever remain with him; but, when he falls away from virtue, its reward terminates. But the misery which then ensues is not the consequence
of virtue, but of vice; for even desistance from virtue is vice. Who, one may here ask, is equal to such unintermitted virtue? Grant, that endless happiness is the reward of such virtue as you speak of: still, what shall we profit by hoping for it? It is true, I reply, that we men have all become so corrupt in our nature, that we are incapable of practising virtue; and, therefore, if we hope to compass the loftiest aim of man on the strength of our virtue, we shall be benefited nothing. But God, in compassion for us sinners, has revealed His word, and has thereby marked out a way, by following which, all our sins will be pardoned, and that reward, by His mercy, will be bestowed upon us, which would have attached to virtue, had virtue been practicable to us. Then will our fallen nature be purged and purified; the ability to practise virtue will be vouchsafed to us; and we shall abide near to God, and dwell in the realms of glory, and enjoy everlasting beatitude.

The second objection which you oppose to the fruit of virtue is, that it implies inequality; some being rewarded more, and others, less: and this also is a ground of misery. My answer is, that this inequality is no real ground of misery. The misery which proceeds from envy has its real root in man's corrupt nature. Envy is a blemish in human nature. It is not found in a pure nature; it is found in a fallen nature. Of him whose nature is fallen the virtue is not really virtue; and, accordingly, he cannot obtain the fruit of virtue. How evident is it, from this, that the Systematists were not acquainted with
the true character of virtue and that of vice! Little did they know of the nature which virtue requires. How can he whose nature is corrupt do works that are right? Outwardly, he may imitate them; but still he retains his corrupt nature, which renders genuine virtue impossible to him. Works only externally good are not the whole of virtue. That, in the sight of God, is virtue, which comes from a pure heart. I will exemplify what I mean. It is proper for a man to show friendship to a friend. But, if a simulator, merely from sense of shame, is outwardly courteous to his friends, but inwardly bears them malice, can he, in the sight of God, be a doer of proper works? Know, then, that they alone whose nature is pure are capable of virtue, and that only such as they will receive the reward of virtue. Others, they may see, are, for greater virtue than their own, rewarded more largely; but they will not, on that account, feel envy. On the contrary, it belongs to a pure nature to take pleasure in the increase of the happiness of others. And thus, that which is a source of misery to an evil nature is, to a pure nature, rather a source of joy.

From their ignorance of the true character of virtue, and that of vice, the pundits err, again, in maintaining, that, on the acquisition of right apprehension, all previous sins are effaced, and that current works become inoperative, or, in other words, that nothing piacular inheres in the bad actions which the rightly apprehensive man is constantly committing. This is altogether untenable. For what connexion is there between the conviction, that I am
not my body, and the effacement of sin? To sin is to do that which, in all circumstances and conditions, is improper for man; and hence, by so doing, man becomes, before God, guilty and deserving of punishment. Is all this set aside by my knowing that I am not body? Moreover, if accumulated and current works are obliterated, why not fructescent works as well? The issue of the whole matter is, that it is vain to hope for salvation on the score of knowing the body to be not identical with the soul; for this knowledge cannot avail to save a man from evil works, or from their penalty.

From this it is clear, that the Hindu, in his ignorance of the nature of virtue and that of vice, supposes their laws to be baseless and fortuitous. He seems to have little notion of the moral goodness or badness of works, and to regard them as producing their effects physically, or mechanically. It plainly appears, from what the pundits have written on this subject, that, in their opinion, pretty much as food possesses an inherent property of appeasing hunger, and as poison possesses an inherent property of causing death, so some works have an innate virtue to ensure celestial happiness, while others have the efficacy of consigning to Hell. Whatever produces happiness is virtue; and whatever produces misery is vice. A foolish man, therefore, who desires the happiness of Elysium, etc., will aim to practise virtue. But he who, weary alike of the happiness and of the misery of an existence of vicissitude, gives up both, and yearns after emancipation, will assuredly free himself from such a plague. He cannot, however,
rid himself of it readily. For, if, so long as he is in a state of misapprehension, in order to escape from the bondage of virtue, he resolves to give up good works, in so doing he transgresses. Hence he must acquire right apprehension, which is the only panacea against virtue.

Similarly, with regard to vice, the pundits think, that, as some substances, poison, for instance, possess an innate virtue of injuring, which, yet, under certain conditions, is neutralized, so, though bad works have an intrinsic property of entailing evil—as the torments of Hell—yet, in the case of the rightly apprehensive man, that property is rendered inefficacious. It is his right knowledge which serves to counteract it. And, therefore, the sin of such a man does not affect him.¹

But, more especially, the fact of the pundits' maintaining, that good and bad works produce their effects, happiness and misery, in a physical manner, becomes plainly manifest from their invention of requitative efficacy as an objective entity. Their reason for believing in what they style requitative efficacy² is this. 'Good works,' they say, 'are the cause of elysian happiness, and bad works are the cause of infernal dolour. And how can this be so? For, if a

¹ If the Hindus had a correct conception of the moral goodness and badness of actions, they would not be found to argue, that Krishna and other members of the pantheon were not defiled by their deeds of wickedness, simply on the ground that those gods were endowed with great power, and were secured from the evil consequences of what they did. On moral grounds, the very commission of such wickedness is defilement.

² In Sanskrit, *apūrva*. 
man does a good act to-day, he does not, therefore, at once go to Elysium, but after the lapse of perhaps a long period, when he dies. How, then—a cause being that which immediately precedes an effect—is that good work the cause of his going to Elysium? Involved in this grave embarrassment, the pundits, with a view to liberate themselves from it, allege, that there is produced, in the soul, by good or by bad works, the quality denominated requitative efficacy; and it is this which consigns the soul to Elysium, or to Hell. It is, then, through the medium of requitative efficacy that good and bad works lead, respectively, to Elysium and to Hell. This requitative efficacy is what they mean by merit or demerit. But what, I would ask, is the necessity of this embarrassment? Good and bad works are not immediately originative of desirable and undesirable consequences, but mediately. And how are they so mediately? As I have said before, God, who is just, in consideration of the virtue and vice of men, himself appoints corresponding reward for them. Since, therefore, this reward depends on the will of God, when it seems proper to Him, He bestows it—at once, it may be, or by and by. And so there is no need of the invention of requitative efficacy. One man serves another, and is daily entitled to wages; and yet his master pays him at a time which he himself determines; monthly, or half-yearly, or annually. But, possibly, some one may say,¹ that, as the hireling, from serving his master, becomes entitled

¹Not that any pundit would hold such language; but a foreigner might, if bent on rationalizing Hinduism.
daily to his wages, just so man, from doing good works, or evil, becomes an heir of Elysium, or of Hell; and his having such a heritage is, for him, requitative efficacy. If, I reply, the pundits had said only thus much, there would have been no harm. But they lay down requitative efficacy as being a real and distinct entity. For example, the Naiyāyikas and the Vaiśeshikas reckon it among the qualities of the soul—apprehension, will, happiness, misery, and the rest; and I affirm, that such a thing cannot be proved to exist. Furthermore, I would say to the pundits, that, if you believe in requitative efficacy as a distinct thing generated by good and evil works, you ought to believe it to be generated by service, in the instance of one man who works for another; for the same objection presents itself in both cases alike. In fact you ought to believe in a similar efficacy in countless other instances besides that of service; and then, instead of twenty-four qualities, you would have qualities innumerable.

The error which I have here charged on the pundits, though it is not perfectly manifest in the Naiyāyika and some other Systems, is yet very clear in the Sāṅkhya and Mīmāṁsā; these not believing in God, and yet affirming, that good and bad works, through requitative efficacy, lead to Elysium and to Hell. In their opinion, from casting an offering into the fire, with utterance of the formula, 'To Indra; may it speed', requitative efficacy is engendered, that which, of its own motion, fructifies in elysian bliss and so forth. What need, then, of God? How strange is all this!
On the point at present in discussion, the Sānkhyas and Mīmāṃsakas labour under miserable misconception; and the rest of the Systematists, also, are more or less in the wrong. For, at the beginning of this book, where I have spoken of the doctrines held in common by the Systems, it will have been seen, that, though the Systematists dissent among themselves on some few matters, yet, on almost every capital question they are alike as to method of consideration and as to reach and bias of intellect. They have all of them tenements of the same sort of foundation, and fabric, and model, however different in outer aspect. One of them may carry a certain error to greater extremes than the rest; but in these as well inheres that error, in embryo.
CHAPTER IV

Examination of the Views concerning the State of Emancipation, professed, in common, by the Naiyāyikas and by the Vaiśeshikas.

I have thus given an account of the Naiyāyika and Vaiśeshika theories as regards God, the soul, the soul’s wretchedness, the cause of that wretchedness, the way of escape from it, and virtue and vice. The treatment of a single topic more will bring this second section to an end. And that topic is, the miserable condition to which the Naiyāyikas and Vaiśeshikas give the name of emancipation; their views on this article growing out of their lamentable conceptions touching God, etc. Is to lose the faculties of apprehension, will, and all manifestations of sensibility, and to become like a stone, the loftiest aim of the soul? In what, I would ask, does this state differ from annihilation? In reply to two objections of the pundits, the one real, and the other presumed: that, if the fruition of happiness be allowed to belong to the state of emancipation, and, if that happiness varies in degree to different recipients, some among the emancipated must be envious of others less favoured than themselves; and that, if cognition, will, and other such faculties
survive in emancipation, the emancipated might admit evil desires, and hence incur danger of falling into sin; I maintain, that they who know not the power of God, and the greatness of His grace, may have such fears. But we, for our parts, who possess the true word of God, learn, from it, that such as accept the terms of salvation which God has offered, and become participators in His grace, will be translated, after death, to the abodes of bliss, and that God will so purify their nature, that they shall never more be affected with evil desires, envy, enmity, pride, and such like. To them will be given, in Heaven, celestial and indefectible bodies; and they will retain all the mental characteristics of conscious beings, and will be for ever blest with the beatific vision, and with the highest joy, ineffable and divine, in being near to Him, and in paying Him adoration, and— their nature being made pure—with serenity of soul, and with peace; their happiness always increasing, and subject to no intermission. And tell me, pray, which state deserves rather to be called the highest aim of man; this, or one of total unconsciousness? This latter is, indeed, not the highest aim of man, but, contrariwise, the lowest of degradations. You say, that souls have existed from all duration, and have, in the meantime, passed through births and deaths unnumbered, suffering incessantly the miseries of an existence of vicissitude. Now and then one has grown wise, and has aspired to escape from its wretchedness, and, to this end, has practised, during several births, austerities, contemplation, and similar observances. And what reward has it received
at last, except the becoming insensible, like a stone,—a state equivalent to annihilation? Of nothing, then, is the destiny so cruel as is that of the soul. So long as, dating from past eternity, it remains conscious, it is subject to wretchedness; and it can hope for no exemption from this wretchedness, other than annihilation. If we were atheists, not believing in God, and if our deliverance from misery depended on our own efforts, to look for emancipation such as yours might be fitting. But, as we believe in a God, inscrutable in power, replete with all goodness, most bountiful, all-merciful, and the Giver of every felicity; and as we hope for emancipation at His hands; it seems to us reasonable to expect an emancipation better than the miserable state to which you give that name. Two ways of attaining the chief aim of the soul are found in the true word of God: by human actions, and by the grace of the Lord. According to the first, on a man's doing that which it is binding on him to do, the reward of his works is bestowed upon him by God. A soul that should always thus do would be rewarded with constant happiness, and to enjoy such happiness is the highest aim of man. But, again, it is written, in the word of God, that it surpasses our strength to follow this way; for we have all become corrupt, through sin, and our works are unworthy of God's acceptance. Our well-being is, therefore, wholly dependent upon the grace of God. By our works we can merit only Hell; but, since God is merciful, He desires to save us by His free grace. In order that we may secure this grace, He has contrived a wondrous plan, giving
proof of His illimitable and ineffable compassionateness, and altogether in harmony with His justice and holiness. And, since He has opened, on our behalf, the treasury of His boundless mercies, will He make our highest happiness to consist in being conformed to the condition of a stone? Endless happiness, whether compassed by works, or by God's grace, alone deserves to receive the name of the highest aim of man. Why, then, will you have it to consist in unconsciousness? The truth is, that this matter cannot be understood save with the help of the illumination derivable from God's own word; and he who rests solely on his own intelligence, in reasoning about it, may well end in some such doctrine as that of the Systematists; namely, that to be emancipated is to become unconscious. The speculators just mentioned proceed somewhat as though they thought they were to be saved by a scheme and by labour of their own: and whence can they, unfortunates, hope to obtain everlasting happiness? Hence it is, that, in their estimation, they will secure everything that is to be secured, if only, bereft of all consciousness, they get quit of the distress which infests an existence of vicissitude. But know, ye Hindus, that to achieve even thus much is impossible for you. God made the soul cognitive; and who shall make it incognitive? The nature with which God endowed the soul cannot be annulled by reflecting, that 'I am not mind, I am not body'. Be assured that our souls will for ever continue conscious. Two things are, however, placed before us, between which to make our election. God,
in his word, points out the way of salvation. If we accept it, we shall make our consciousness the instrument of eternal joy. If, on the other hand, we reject it, we shall make our consciousness the instrument of eternal affliction and torment. As, therefore, you seek for well-being, accept the genuine word of God.

My motive in exposing the faults of the Systems has not at all been, to convict their authors of error, for the purpose of holding them up to ridicule. My aim has been, to show, that whoever—whether they, or I, or any one else—undertakes to argue, in reliance on unaided reason, about divine and spiritual things, must constantly fall into error; the mind of man being impotent to understand them rightly. When you are convinced, that they are correctly described in the Christian religion, you will know, that this is the true religion of God. Accordingly, it is my wish, that you should study the Christian Scriptures, and with candour. To this study, fixed attention, docility, and patient thought are indispensible; for, when a man has, during a long space of time, entertained any particular set of opinions, he is slow to perceive their faults, and to recognize the excellence of what conflicts with them. But, if you conduct this investigation with humble prayer to God, you shall attain to a knowledge of the truth.
CHAPTER I

Description of the Three Sorts of Existence held in the Vedānta; the Key to a Right Understanding of that Scheme of Philosophy.

Having briefly considered five out of the six great Hindu systems, I shall, in this section, examine the Vedānta. And to engage in such an examination in the present day is especially important. The Hindus, it is true, refer all the systems to Rishis; but, in our time, these systems, the Vedānta apart, have no followers, except perhaps here and there an individual. As for the Vedānta, it is held by a large majority of all Hindus.

The Vedāntins argue three sorts of existence; and one must thoroughly comprehend and ponder them, in order to take in the meaning of their scheme. These they designate as true, practical, and apparent.¹

¹ तियत्र सत्वं पारमार्थिकं व्यावहारिकं प्रातिभासिकं चेति | तत्र पारमार्थिकं सत्वं ब्रह्म: व्यावहारिकं सत्त्वमाकाशादेः: प्रातिभासिकं सत्वं शक्तिरजतादेः: | Vedānta-paribhāshā, p. 18, 'Existence is of three sorts, true (pāramārthika), practical (vyāvahārika), and apparent (pratibhāsika). True existence is that of Brahma; practical, that of ether, etc.; apparent, that of nacreine silver and the like.'
That which verily exists is called true, and its existence, true existence;¹ and this existence, according to the Vedānta, is predicable of Brahma exclusively. The second species of existence has the name of practical. The things to which it belongs do not veritably exist: only the misapprehensive, or ignorant, mistake them for existent, and by means of them transact practical life; whence the epithet. And it must be kept in mind, that, as the things just spoken of are thought to be not veritably existent, but to be imagined by ignorance, precisely so is it with the use made of them. For instance, a man in a dream drinks water, or mounts a horse: the water and the horse are visionary; and so are the drinking and the

¹ Dr. J. R. Ballantyne takes pāramārthika to denote ‘being, in its highest sense.’—Christianity Contrasted, etc., p. 38.

That pāramārthika, popularly, is everywhere used to signify ‘true’, one may learn without any very laborious search. The adverb pāramārthataḥ means ‘in truth’, ‘indeed’, etc.

The fact, that the Vedāntins, in contradistinquishing practical and apparent existence from the first species, style them mithyā, or false, is a further proof, that the sense here attached to pāramārthika is alone correct. Though the word is technical with the Vedāntins, they have done no violence to its ordinary meaning.

Vijñāna Bhikshu, on an occasion where he employs pāramārthikataḥ—the abstract substantive of pāramārthika—in the sense of ‘unchangeableness and eternalness’, clearly intimates, that his acceptation of the term, as a follower of the Sāṅkhya, is different from that of the Vedāntins. See the Sāṅkhya-pra-vachana-bhāṣya, p. 25.

The torture to which Vijñāna habitually—and especially in the Sāṅkhya-sāra—subjects the whole compass of the Vedānta nomenclature, reminds one forcibly of the sanctimonious vocabulary of free-handlers and secularists among our contemporaries in Christian countries.
mounting. If the use to which one puts a thing is veritable, the thing also must be veritable; for, to have veritable dealings with that which is false is impossible. Can a man in his waking senses bathe in a river that he saw in his sleep? The things which, agreeably to the phraseology of the Vedāntins, are practical, are the very things which all men, themselves excepted, call true: and such are Īśvara, or the maker of the world, souls, and all the world besides. Their existence these philosophers hold to be the result of ignorance; and such existence is termed, by them, practical. The third species of existence, denominated apparent, resembles the practical, in that it is false, but, by mistake, seems to be

\[1\]  

1 यद्वर्तियं सतोःसंसारि ब्रह्म वेदांतप्रमाणकं तर्थं कथ- 
मवस्थायविशिष्टा जोवा भोक्तारोऽनुभूत्ते भोजयिता चेष्वर: 
श्रूयते भोजयं च विषयजातं प्रृथ्वुपलम्मते। तदेतदहैरे विह- 
द्वेषेत्यायाजङ्क्य ब्रह्मपेव जोवा जगदोश्चस्यंति सर्वं काल्प- 
निकं सम्भवतीयमिश्र्यास्सह। Ānanda Giri commenting on Šankara Āchārya's Māndūkya-bhāṣyā: Bibliotheca Indica, Vol. VIII, pp. 326–7. ‘If Brahma, secondless, and essentially unconnected with the world, be established by the Vedānta, how is it, that there are souls, subject to three conditions, those of waking, dreaming, and insensible sleep, and employers of objects; and how is it, that an Īśvara, effecting the experience of souls, is revealed by scripture; and how is it, the aggregate of objects subserving experience is found as a thing apart from these? If monism were true, all these would present themselves as incompatible. With reference to such an objection, it is set forth as follows, with intent to declare,
veritable. It differs, however, from the practical in three respects. First, the ignorant, that is to say, that souls, the world, and Íśvara can all reasonably be admitted as things of imagination surmised in Brahma.

A little further on, Ánanda Giri says: अतो श्रद्धायेवाद्वस्या—त्रयं तद्नैं जोवा मायाधि श्राह्च च श्रद्धानि परिसुद्धे परिकल्पितं सर्वभिमियाह। ‘Therefore it is enunciated, that the three conditions, and the souls subject thereto, and the Illusive Brahma, i.e. Íśvara, are all imagined in the pure Brahma.’

The reason why the Vedántins use such an expression as ‘silver imagined in nacre’, is, of course, that the nacre is the substrate of the imaginary silver. Strictly analogous, in their view, to the nacre and silver of this illustration are Brahma and the world, etc., where they speak of the world, souls, and Íśvara, as imagined by the ignorant, in Brahma. It is to be understood, that Brahma is not the subject of the imagination, but its object.

A most eminent authority in Vedánta matters, Sarvajñátmá Muni, thus instructs the learner:

तत्र गादभूदत्तमसा रचितं जगदीशजीववपुषा सकलम्।
प्रतिभाति तावदद्वें द्वेशतं समुदैति यावदवोभरविः॥

‘इति | Sankshepa-sáriraka, from a MS not at hand for reference. ‘All that is devised, or fancied, in the form of the world, of Íśa, and of souls, by the ignorance forcibly possessing thee, appears—albeit unsubstantial, viz., barren of true existence—substantial, until the sun of right apprehension rises.’

This couplet has been interpreted in accordance with the gloss of Madhusúdana Sarasavati, who takes gádhám as an adverb.

Íśa, or Íśvara—the maker of the world—and souls, since the Vedántins consider them as, no less than the world itself, ignorance-imagined and false, come under the category of things practical.
ordinary men, do not constantly, but only now and then, mistake for veritable the apparent objects to which it appertains; as nacreine silver, and the matters of a dream. Nor, secondly, is there any practical dealing with these things. Let a man who mistakes nacre for silver offer it for sale: he will not get for it the price of silver; for it will be recognized, by others, as another substance. Thirdly, it is because of ignorance, that the practical seems to be veritable; but it is by reason, additionally to ignorance of distance and other causes, called defects, enumerated by the Naiyāyikas, etc., that the apparent seems veritable.\(^1\) Such are the Vedāntin's three sorts of existence, the true, the practical, and the apparent.

To obtain a just view of the Vedānta doctrine, or even to appreciate its fallacy, it is all-important to

\(^1\) घटायाध्यासेविषयक दोषलेनादपि हेतु: शृंकिलुपघणायासे तृ काचादयो दोषा: | *Vedānta-paribhāṣā*, p. 12. 'Nescience, the cause of mistaking Brahma for a jar, or other practical object, is to be considered as a defect also. When, however, nacre is mistaken for silver, an ocular affection, or similar defect, is the cause of the misapprehension.'

It is not to be understood, that, in the case of nacreine silver, nescience is excluded as a cause. The defects specified are causes additional thereto. This appears from the two pages of the *Vedānta-paribhāṣā* preceding that here quoted from.

The term *dosa*, 'defect' is a technicality generalizing certain causes of misapprehension.

\[\text{दोषोः प्रामायणकालं जनक: प्रमायास्तु गुणो भवेत्} \]
\[\text{पिन्तदृश्याविद्यापि दोषो नानाविधः स्मत:} \]

\[\text{इति} \quad Bhāsha-parichhedā, 130th couplet.\]
master its theory of three existences. It must be understood, that it is not because existent things are—in any way to us intelligible—of various kinds, that the Vedántins contend for a difference in their existence. In other words, they do not predicate a difference between the existences of things, because one is eternal and another is uneternal, or because one is self-existent and another exists dependently.1 It is a difference in the very nature of existing, not in its mode, that they insist upon. Their view on this subject will now be exhibited.

To the Vedántins the establishment of monism, or non-duality, is most essential. They wish to make out the soul to be Brahma, and the world to be false;

'A defect is a cause of wrong notion; a virtue, of right notion. Defects are pronounced to be multifarious, as bile, giving rise to jaundice, distance, etc.'

1 According to the Vedánta, souls, as souls, and also ignorance and Īśvara, are beginningless and self-existent. Still, we find ascribed to them a different existence from that of Brahma. It is called false.

For the unoriginatedness of souls, etc., see the last quotation in p. 49. The source of the couplet there given has not been ascertained. Its statements are, however, called in question by no Vedántin. Among the various treatises which cite it is, besides the Sūdhānta-ratnamālā, the Kṛṣṇālaṅkāra of Achyutakrishṇa Ānanda Tīrtha; a commentary on Appayya Dīkshita's Sūdhānta-lesa. Moreover, it is at the tongue's end of almost every student of the Vedánta.

Achyutakrishṇa reads, as the second quarter of the distich

तथा जीवेश्योर्मिदा, 'likewise the distinction, 'between the soul and Īśa.' This lection is by much to be preferred.

Māyā, illusion, avidyā, nescience, and amāna, ignorance—when these two denote collectivity—are synonyms. Nescience
whence it would follow, that Brahma solely is true, and that nought but him exists, or ever existed, or at any time will exist. From the couplet of the Śiva-gītā, which I shall quote in the sixth chapter, and from numberless other passages of Vedānta works, it is manifest, that, in their view, the world is false, and imagined by ignorance. Not that they only figuratively call it false—as we sometimes call things of an evanescent and perishable character; but they mean, that it is indeed so, like nacreine silver.¹ As such silver is nothing, and wholly from

and ignorance, when referred to souls in several, are only fractional portions of illusion. See the Vedānta-sāra, pp. 4, etc.

¹ ब्रह्माभिन्न सर्वं मिथ्या त्रहमभिन्नलाव || यदेवं तदेवं

यथा शक्तिस्वयम् || Vedānta-parbhāśā, p. 17. ‘All other than Brahma is false because other than Brahma. Whatever is thus different is thus false; for instance nacreine silver.

Those of the Systematists who are not Vedāntins apprehend the doctrine under comment in the manner in which it is apprehended in the text.

न केवलमुक्तयुक्तवैवास्तवादिनो हेया अपि तु जगदस्य-ताम्राहकप्रमाणामाबेनाःप्राप्त आह ||

जगस्यतमस्युद्धुकारणजन्यवाद वाधकाभावात ||

निम्नादिदोषुद्ग्राहः करणादिजन्यलेख स्वामविषयविद्वानी मादोनामङ्गालं लोके दृष्टं तच् च महदादिप्रमशे नास्ति तत्कार-पणये प्रस्तुतेहिर्गयात्रपुदेहासदुष्टावत || Sānkhya-pravachana-
hāshya, p. 225. ‘Not only on the ground of the aforesaid
ignorance seems to be something, just so, they say, is the world nothing, it being imagined by ignorance, that is, it seeming, simply by reason of ignorance, to exist. To maintain otherwise would be to surrender non-duality.

Further, it is surprising to find, that the ignorance which imagines the world is laid down as being itself ignorance-imagined, and hence false. They refuse to grant that even this is true; and consistently, else non-duality would be impeached by the presentation of another entity than Brahma—ignorance. Thus it is, that they would establish Brahma alone to be true, and all besides to be illusory. When, therefore, they give the epithet of true to the existence of Brahma, and that of practical to the existence of the world, we are to understand, that, in their system, that existence argument are the monists to be shunned, but, further, because there is no proof to establish the untruthlessness of the world. To this effect it is set forth, in the aphorism: 'The world is true, since its origination is from a cause that has no defect, and since there is nothing to make out the world to be false.' The objects of a dream, the imagined yellowness of a white conch-shell, etc., are found, among men, to be untrue, by reason that they owe their origin to the internal organ, etc., infected by the defects of sleep, etc. This untruthness does not belong to the universe made up of the great principle and the rest; for the causes of that universe, nature and the intellect of Hiranyagarbha, the Creator, are free from all defect.'

The aphorism cited in this extract is vi, 52.

Vijnana, in continuation, will have it, that the Vedantins wrest from their legitimate drift the passages of the Veda which they adduce to establish, that the world is false. For, he says, if those passages mean as is pretended, the result is suicidal; the Veda being itself of the world.

1 See the eighth chapter of this section.
which is indeed real is called true, and the epithet of practical is given to false existence, or existence which in fact is not, but, owing to mistake, seems to have place.

In only applying names to real things, and to unreal, there is no fault. The extraordinary error of the Vedāntins is of quite another character. I have already said, that they would prove both the world and ignorance to be ignorance-imagined and altogether false. But, earnestly as they desire to have them so, their inner consciousness refuses to rate them as altogether nothing; for the mind of man will not give willing entrance to an absurdity. The world, the Vedāntins allege, is veritably nothing, but, because of ignorance, appears to exist; after the manner of nacreine silver. Now, can the mind assent to the notion, that even that ignorance is nothing whatever? Never; and he who tries to reconcile with it his own views generally, and the common experience of mankind, will encounter obstacles at every step. Moreover, to call such ignorance nothing, is, evidently, most venturesome. Nor do the Vedāntins feel, that the world is nought. Let it be believed, that, when they denominate ignorance and the world false, they cannot help feeling, that they are not so far false as to be nothing at all: they must possess some sort or other of existence.

On gathering, from this, that the Vedāntins allow to the world a certain sort of existence, one might suppose, that they must give up non-duality; for, however, they may designate the world’s existence, if they concede, that the world really exists, their Brahma does not remain without a second; and the
consequence is duality. This brings us to the knot of their error. They argue, as was said before, for distinct kinds of existence—not various modes of existence. The world, according to them, really exists; but its existence differs from that of Brahma. They call this existence a false existence, and their so calling it brings them into error; and this error blinds them to their inconsistency. The world's existence is, they allege, false existence; if true, of course the issue would be duality. Analogously, though a madman, alone in a room, thinks himself one of a crowd, his so fancying does not invalidate his being there by himself. Mark, how the Vedántins herein err. Their assertion, that the untrue existence of the world is of no prejudice to monism, would be correct, if they understood such existence to be non-existence; as is the existence of the aforesaid madman's crowd. Since that existence is allowed, by them, to be in fact, they do not mend the matter by calling it untrue. As for themselves, they think otherwise. They urge, that we have two kinds of existence, the true and the untrue. As that thing which possesses the former kind exists, so does that which possesses the latter: for it has existence: but the thing is untrue, because its existence is of that stamp. And so the doctrine of non-duality is saved uninjured. Observe, that the Vedántins believe in two classes of objects, true and untrue, and both of them really existent; only an

1 For convenience, the third kind of existence is here kept out of sight.
THREE SORTS OF EXISTENCE

object of the first class is really real,¹ and an object of the second class is unreally real.²

¹ It is not claimed, that the expression 'really real', and especially that of 'unreally real', does not savour strongly of the absurd. But it is things altogether absurd that are here taken account of.

Among unreally real things are included, with the practical, things apparent, soon to be spoken of. Added to these, and the true, there is a fourth class, to comprehend positive unrealities. Examples of objects of this class are, the son of a barren woman, a hare's horn, sky-blossoms, etc. Their technical epithet is tuchchha.

² The notion of practical existence, entertained by the Vedāntins, is, summarily, a combination of two contradictory ideas, that of existence and that of non-existence. This assertion may be made good simply by showing, that, while the endeavour to prove the world, and all other practical things, no less than all that are apparent, to be nothing whatever, they believe, that the same things are something. The first of these antagonistic positions has been illustrated, and will be illustrated further; and, as for the second, it is evident, on inspecting the books of the Vedāntins, that they receive as realities the world and whatever else they call practical. Moreover, as has been seen, they comprehend their Iśvara, maker of the world, among practical and false objects, and yet believe, that he really exists. On perusing the eighth chapter, the reader will, further, be satisfied, that, though they would prove the ignorance which imagines the world to be nothing at all, yet they cannot but allow, that it has a certain real existence.

That the view here taken is correct, confirmation is furnished by the words of two very celebrated Hindu philosophers, Pārthasārathi Miśra and Vijnāna Bhikshu, writers on the Māṁsā and on the Sānkhyā, respectively.

Pārthasārathi, refuting the Vedānta, urges, that, inasmuch as the universe is certified, by perception, to be true, it cannot be made out false. If, he says, it is held, on the word of the Veda, to be false, the Veda itself, as being included in the universe, must be false; and, consequently its proof is invalid.
Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.

Then he introduces a Vedāntin, and refutes him, as follows:

Furthermore, the aspect of these classes of objects varies according to the point of view from which they are beheld—conceive true existence and practical existence as two stations, with a station intermediate.
A person located at practical existence does not style its objects unreally real: for, to his eyes, there is only one sort of existence; and all that presents itself to him he must deem simply real. In circumstances similar to his are, according to the Vedānta, all who

On the other hand, if not unreal, it follows, that it is true. For the denial of either of these, trueness and unreality, implies the affirmation of the other: and no alternative besides these is possible. "That which never presents itself—as the horn of a hare—is held for unreal; and that which presents itself, and is never falsified—as the true nature of spirit—is held for true; and, as for the universe, since it presents itself, and yet is falsified by right apprehension, it is not to be described as true, or, yet, as unreal." The view thus propounded, as being at war with ordinary consciousness, is impossible of establishment. For that which presents itself, and is falsified—as the mirage, or a snake surmised in a rope—is positively unreal; as, to be sure, all the world is persuaded; there being no difference, in the estimation of mankind generally, between such a thing as the horn of a hare and such a thing as the mirage. Hence, if the universe be falsified by right apprehension, it is simply unreal, and so is not incapable of being described as true or as unreal."

Observe whence this argument sets out. Pārthasārathi begins by arguing, that the Vedāntins cannot uphold the falseness of the universe on the faith of the Veda; for that the Veda is part and parcel of their false universe. Now, since the Vedāntins fall back on the Veda as the foundation of their belief, it cannot be supposed, that they look upon it as altogether nothing. The end of the argument adduced above, by the Vedāntin, is to reconcile these two positions: that the universe, the Veda inclusive, is indeed false and that, nevertheless it is existent. Herein we have the combination of two irreconcilable ideas, spoken of at the beginning of this note. So understands Pārthasārathi; and he proceeds, to deal with the idea on the basis of common sense.

The subjoined words of the same writer, which follow shortly after the passage just extracted, support what is asserted in
are known as misapprehensive, or ignorant. Again, a person located at true existence would not designate its one object, Brahma, as really real: for, with him likewise, only one sort of existence would offer itself for inspection; and that, as above, as simply real. Such would be the standing point of the Vedāntins' Brahma, except for his lacking the faculty of cognition—as will be seen by and by. A person located at the intermediate station, just now mentioned, is enabled to pass in review the objects of both the

the text. The Vedāntin is asked, whether he takes nescience to import misapprehension, or something else, causative thereof. In neither case can it appertain to Brahma:

‘In respect of those who accept erroneous apprehension, or a cause of it, as an entity additional to Brahma, for them non-duality perishes

It will be made plain, in the eighth chapter, that the Vedāntins cannot repute their ignorance to be quite a non-entity, and yet, to save the dogma of monism, and other doctrines, they essay to prove, at the same time, that ignorance is false, or a non-entity. If, in assigning to ignorance false existence, an existence other than that of Brahma, they meant only, that it is subjective, transitory, or the like, and, on that account, different in kind from their eternal Brahma; and if they meant, by the tenet of non-duality nothing more than this, that, Brahma apart, there is nought of an ever-enduring character;’ there would be no want of reasonableness in the conception. This style of non-duality would take no harm from ignorance; and there would have been no opening for the polemics of Pārthasārathi. The truth is, that they do not understand the falseness of ignorance, and that of the world, in this way; but, to preserve monism, they would make out both ignorance and the world to be positive non-entities. This, their aim, to establish ignorance as a non-entity, is ignored, by Pārthasārathi, as an absurdity beneath his notice.
other stations; and he alone can speak of those objects as they veritably are. By him they all alike are seen to be real; the true object, as really real, and practical objects, as unreally real. This person is the Vedāntin.

To their third kind of existence the Vedāntins give the appellation of apparent. A perusal of what is now to be said of it will elucidate the statements just put forth, and will serve to induce confidence in them. It is objects of error, such as nacrine silver, and a snake imagined in a rope, that are meant by

विश्वद्वब्यवहा चेत। ननु विश्वं यदुमयं सदसच्चे च
सदसद्विद्विषं वा तद्वैवविषं वक्तव्यातो न तथा पारमाश्च
धिकाद्विद्विषं इति चेदियस्य:। * * * * न ताददक् पदार्थि-प्रतीते:।

Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāshya, p. 25: “If it be held, that nescience is essentially of two contradictories.” But, “should” it be alleged “that nescience ought to be pronounced essentially of two contradictories”, entity and non-entity, or else to be different from both; and thus there would be no invalidation, thereby, i.e. by nescience, of non-duality, the only true (pāramārthika) state. Such is the sense. . . “Not so; for such a thing is unknown.”

This passage takes in the twenty-third and twenty-fourth aphorisms of the Sāṅkhya-pravachana, Book I. The first is put into the mouth of a Vedāntin; and the second curtly replies to it.

Vijnāna Bhikshu asserts, that the portion of the Sāṅkhya-pravachana here quoted from is directed, primarily, against the Baudhās, but that it tells with equal relevancy, in confutation of the illusionists (māyāvādīn) and crypto-Baudhās (pravchāhana-baudhāha). The Vedāntins are denoted by both these titles. The latter is applied to them dyslogistically; and the application is far from infrequent.
apparent objects. As was before remarked, it is not because of any rationally assignable difference in the nature of things, but because of a belief in difference as to their very existence, that the Vedántins ascribe to them different sorts of existence. By what I am about to show, this assertion will be evinced as true. No one can suspect, as regards what is styled apparent existence, that it is so styled on account of any rationally assignable difference, in the nature of the things of which it is affirmed, from that of things true and practical; those things that are called apparent being, we are all aware, nothing. If it be said, that, for this very reason, apparent things may be held to differ in nature from other things, and that, therefore, for convenience, the Vedántins give a name to the false existence of apparent things, I reply, that I do not accuse them on this ground, but on the ground, that they reckon such existence, and the things to which it is ascribed, as possessing a species of reality. Respecting apparent things the partisans of the Vedánta hold this language; ¹ that, when a man,

¹नन् विसंवादिप्रवृत्तम भ्रान्तिन्द्वस्य विषयसिद्धविपि तस्य प्रातिभासिकततकालोप्यनरजतादिविषयकवे न प्रमाणं देशान्तर- रीयरजतस्य कृत्यविव तद्विषयबलसम्भवादिति चेत न । तस्या- उचितांश्रयम् प्रयथन्विषयबायोगतः । Vedānta-paribhāsha, p. 10. 'Though, by the efforts, however bellying, of a mis- apprehensive person, to obtain possession of an illusory object, such an object is established as existent, yet there is no proof, that it, the misapprehension, has reference to an apparent object, as silver, etc., produced at that time.' For silver
on seeing nacre, takes it for silver, apparent silver which is extant elsewhere may be taken as its object. If this be said, I demur; since that silver elsewhere, not being in contact with an organ of sense, cannot be an object of perception.

There is room to suspect, that the word विषय in the first line of this extract, is an interpolation. The objector here rebutted is a Naiyāyika, who, as such, holds misapprehension to be what is technically called anyathā-khyāti. By this is meant, the apprehension of an object otherwise than as it is. Agreeably to the Naiyāyikas, when, for instance, a man mistakes nacre for silver, the object of his mistake must be confessed to exist, but elsewhere than in the place to which he erroneously refers it. That is to say, the very silver which he has seen in some other place is supposed, by him, to be then present before him. To copy the Naiyāyika expression, instead of perceiving nacreness, he transfers the silverness, which he has seen on some other occasion, to the nacre lying in his sight. This view the Vedāntins reject, on the following ground, implied in his answer. The misapprehension in question is, in the view of the pundits, one of perception; and, in all perception, the contact is essential of an organ of sense with the object perceived. Absent silver cannot, therefore, account for the mistake committed.

Misapprehension is by others, explained under the designation of asatkhyāti, ‘the apprehension of what is not’. This notion, on the ground of their argument given above, is also disallowed by the Vedāntins.

An objection respecting things seen in dreams is thus adduced and answered: ननु स्मस्यले पूर्वानुभूतत्वादेः समरणमात्राश्च व्यक्तारोपयति न स्थादिसुस्थितकल्पनं गौरवातिति चेतो न स्थादेः स्त्रातिमात्श्रयपमे रथं पद्यामि स्मृतं रथमाहात्-मित्यायान्मवविरोधाप्तेः। Vedānta-paribhāshā, p. 13, ‘Since
is really produced. If silver, I ask, is then really in the case of dreams, what there goes on may be accounted for by simple remembrance of a chariot, or the like, previously cognized, to imagine the production of those objects is not admissible, because cumbersome. Should this be urged, I except; for, to allow mere remembrance of a chariot, or the like, to be here a sufficient cause is contravened by the consciousness of a man, in a dream, that he sees a chariot, and his consciousness, when afterwards awake, that he saw a chariot in a dream.'

How apparent silver is produced will be seen from what ensues: Ibid., p. 10. नन्द रजतोत्त्वादकां रजतावत्त्वादीनामभी शुक्ली तत्तापिकं कं रजतमुख्तिते हितं चेदुच्चते । न हि कोकसिद्धाम्बी प्रसत्तासिकरजतोत्त्वादिका किलु विलक्षणैव । तथाहि काचादिदोषदशितिजोचनयस्य पुरोतितिश्रव्यसंयोगादिददमाकारा च/कचकयाकारा च काचिनदन्तः करणोद्वितिः । तस्या च वृत्तो इदमवल्लिच्छलचेतनं प्रतिविम्बते । तत् पूर्वक्रिया वृत्ते-निम्नमाननि इदमवल्लिच्छलचेतनं विस्तरवच्छिलचेतनं प्रमातृचेतनं चालिन्यं भवति । ततस्य प्रमातृचेतन्याभित्विर्यचेतन्यनिष्प शुक्लिप्रकृतारिका अविरि चाचकव्यादिसाध्यसंदर्शनसङ्गठनस्थलो-भितरजस्तसंस्कारसहीचो चाचादिदोषसमवहिता रजत्रघष्पायर्कार-रेण रजतावत्त्वादामाकारे च परिणामते । 'Since the originators of silver, its parts and other causes, do not exist in nacre, how, with thyself, is silver produced there? If so interrogated, I reply: It is not, that the constituents popularly recognized are the originators of apparent silver. These are different. Thus, when the contact takes place between,
produced, how is there proved to be a misconception?

for instance, the eye, labouring under the defect of bilious humour, or the like, and a present object, there arises an affection of the internal organ, in the form of that object and likewise in the form of its glitter. In that affection intelligence, that is, Brahma, appropriated to that object, is reflected. At that spot, namely, where the object is located, in the manner aforesaid, by reason of the egress and advent there of the affection, intelligence appropriated to that object, intelligence appropriated to that affection, and intelligence the subject of right notion, these three, become identical. Afterwards, nescience—residing in the object-appropriated intelligence, one with intelligence the subject of right notion; cognizing naïveness as the abstract nature of the thing beheld; aided by the impression of silver before seen, an impression resuscitated by the perception of similarity in the glitter, etc., of the object present to that of silver previously seen, associated with the forementioned defects, bile, etc., is evolved, in the form of the object, the apparent silver, and also in the form of a semblance of a cognition of that silver.

Just as, with the Sāṅkhāyas, the whole world is evolved from nature, with the Vedāntins, all practical things are evolutions from nescience, or ignorance; and equally so are all apparent things, and the apprehension of them, styled, above, 'the semblance of a cognition'. In the evolution of apparent things there is, however, the association of defects, which have no place in the evolutions of things practical; as was mentioned in the text, at p. 218, and the related note. The statement which we have seen about the identification of three sorts of intelligence is designed to show, that the misapprehension of naïve for silver is an error of perception. This question is one of great difficulty; but some light will be thrown upon it in the fifth chapter. The idea of identification of three sorts of intelligence may be thus explicated. Intelligence, or Brahma, is, like ether, universally diffused; and, being so diffused it is said to be appropriated to everything which it contains. Ether is laid down as being, in reality, one. Still, though the ether in a jar outside a house is said to be distinct from the ether within the house, yet, when the jar is brought into the house,
In reply, I am told, that, if the silver were true, identity is realized of the ether of the jar with that of the house. Similarly, when an affection of the internal organ and the object of that affection become colocal, the Brahma of the affection and that of the object coalesce into one. The doctrine of the impenetrability of matter is unknown to the pundits. In their view, the internal organ and its evolutions are strictly material, and yet an affection of that organ and a material object can take up the same space.

ननु शुद्धो रजस्य प्रतिभास्समये सत्तामयुपगमे नेदं रजत-मिति श्रीकालिकनिषेधङ्गानं न स्यात किन्तु इदानीं न रजत-मिति स्यात * * * इति चेत न। न हि तत् रजतवां-वच्छलप्रतियोगिकाभायो निरिक्षिणिष्य: किन्तू लोकिकालपारसा-र्थिकावांचिन्हप्रतिभास्सकरजतप्रतियोगिक:। Ibid., p. 14, 'If it be admitted, that apparent silver exists, at the time of its appearance, in the nacre, the cognition, to one not misapprehensive, in the form of "This is not silver," of the non-existence, through tripartite time, of silver, would not have place; but the cognition would be in the form of "This thing is not now, silver." * * * If this be affirmed, it is contested: for the object here, of the cognition "It is not silver," is not the non-existence of silver as silver, but the non-existence of apparent silver, as true and practical.'

Such is the sense of the Sanskrit. Some of its expressions, in a literal reproduction, would only perplex the reader, and entail a long comment.

It comes out from this, that, in the apprehension of the Vedántins, a thing may, contemporaneously, be both really existent and really non-existent. When, from misapprehension, a man takes nacre to be silver, apparent silver, it is thought, is really produced, and exists for him. Another looker on, not under such a misapprehension, thinks, that there is no silver where the other fancies he sees it. His idea, it is asserted, is authentic; the non-existence of silver, apprehended by him
or practical, there would be no room to speak of being supposed to have reference to apparent silver as true and practical.

Language similar to that about apparent objects, in the last extract, is found concerning practical objects also.

The falseness of these objects is defined as follows: सिद्धालं च साश्रयलेनाभिमतयाविनिमायन्ताभवप्रतियोगिलम् | Ibid., p. 18. 'By a false thing is meant that whose absolute non-existence resides in the entirety of what is erroneously taken for its substrate.'

This definition is thus applied to things practical. Take a jar, for instance. Its parts are deemed, by the Naiyāyikas and others, to be its material cause and substrate. See pages 128 and 129. But those parts are erroneously so taken, assert the Vedāntins, by all but themselves; since a jar, a practical object, being false, has no substrate. In the parts of the jar, wrongly supposed to be its substrate, resides the absolute non-existence of the jar itself; and, therefore, the jar is false.

The same definition is applied to the jar's parts, the absolute non-existence of which resides in their own parts, the material cause and the substrate of the primary parts. Intermediate effects and causes being traversed, ignorance, the material cause and substrate of everything save Brahma, is at length reached; all the effects on the way having been proved false, since the non-existence of each resides in its material cause. Ignorance then comes to be dealt with. Its non-existence resides in Brahma, the imagined substrate, or, as it is also termed, illusory-material cause, of ignorance, as of all else than Brahma. Everything, Brahma excepted, is, thus, concluded to be false.

To this conclusion an exception is suggested and replied to: न च घटादेमिद्याते सन घट इति प्रतिद्दौण बाधः अविश्वास- ब्रह्मस्तत्तत्समविषयत्या घटादे: सत्यवासिद्दे: | Ibid., p. 18.

'Let it not be thought, that the notion of the falseness of a jar, or the like, is contradicted by the perception of the jar as existent; for, since the object, in that perception, is the
misconception; but, since it is neither, but apparent, existence of Brahma, the substrate of the jar, not the existence of the jar, the verity of the jar, etc., is not established.'

Another answer is subjoined. घटः सत्यिति प्रत्यक्षम् ध्यान- हरिकसात्वविषयवेत्र प्रामाण्यम्। अस्मि पश्चि घटादेश्वर्णि निषेधो न खङ्ग्रेण किंतु परासाधिकालनेति न विरोधः। अस्मि पश्चि मध्यालक्षणेपरासाधिकालविल्लिन्तियोगिकाल- मयंतामालविशेषणं द्वृष्यम्। ibid., p. 18. 'The perception, that the jar exists, can be made out to be correct, inasmuch as it has practical existence for its object. Conformably to this position, the existence, in Brahma, of a jar as true is denied, not that of jar as a jar. Thus there is no incongruity. According to this opinion, namely, that in the perception of a jar as existent, practical existence is apprehended, the qualification "relative to a thing considered as true" is to be added to "absolute non-existence," in the definition of falseness, lately given.'

By the definition of falseness, practical things have no existence, and yet these words assign to them a sort of existence. On referring for comparison, to the passage from the fourteenth page of the Vedānta-paribhāṣā, at pp. 160-70, the reader will perceive, that practical and apparent things differ in no respect, among themselves, in being both true and false.

To return to things apparent, the Vedāntins do not, in all cases of misapprehension, contend for their production. वेदान्तार रोप्यमनुचिक्षुं तत्वान प्रतिभासिकवस्तुपर्यथाज्ञानकारात्। ibid., p 14. 'Only when a false thing imagined in one veritable is not in contact with an organ of sense, is an apparent thing acknowledged to be produced.'

Where, however, the object is near, the Vedāntins concur with the Nāryālikas in admitting anyathā-khyāti; for, since the object is brought into contact with an organ of sense, the fact, that the misapprehension, is perceptional, is accounted for. To
misconception has place.¹ From this it is clear, that, when the Vedāntins call the existence of an apparent thing—a thing, they say, really produced—apparent, it is not because the thing differs by nature from other things, but because its existence differs from the existence of other things. If the thing were different simply by nature, and not in respect of existence, how could the apprehension of it be reputed a misconception? The same reasoning will apply to practical things, no less than to apparent: for, as the apprehension, by one labouring under mistake, of nacrine silver, is considered, from the standing point of practical existence, to be misconception; in like manner, the apprehension of the world, and of the things therein, by those whom the Vedāntins call ignorant, or even by the wise while detained in the body, from the standing point of true existence, is considered to be misconception.²

argue the production of an apparent object may, therefore, here be dispensed with.

¹ शुक्लिकान्यादिभ्रमस्य संसारकालीनवाचविषयप्रार्थिमामिकारोन्तादिबिषयाकारः। Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 10. ‘Because misconception about nacrine silver and the like has, for its object, apparent silver, etc., which are proved, by correct perception in the state of practical existence, to be false.’

² Since, according to a tenet of the Vedānta, all things but Brahma are false, how can the cognition of them be regarded as right notion? In reply to this interrogatory, it is said:—

द्वेदामप्रक्षयो यद्व गृहाणलोगकलपित: ।
लोकिकं तद्वरूपेदः प्रमाणं लाभत्वनिश्चयात् ॥
Finally, it should be understood, that, in fact, the aim of the Vedāntins is, to make out the world, etc., to be veritable non-entities; for, this unestablished, even so is monism. It is the stubborn and irrefragable actuality of external things that compels them, as it were in their own despite, to enunciate a second kind of existence, one applicable to such things; and the character which they give to that existence compels them to add a third. Their inward impressions, however, touching their views, vary with varying occasions. Thus, when they turn their contemplation towards the world, it presents itself to them as having really an existence. Then, that no harm may come to their notion of monism, they apply to that existence the epithet of false, and so relieve their discomfort. Yet, when they pass to reflect on their secondless Brahma, and in order to prove his secondlessness, and the world’s falsity, assert, that the world is ignorance-imagined, it appears to their minds as if the world were really nothing whatsoever.

Their chief aim being as aforesaid, it must, consequently, be borne in mind—and, throughout this work,

इति । Cited in the Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 2. ‘As the notion, that the body is one’s self, is imagined, by the ignorant, to be correct; even so the practical apprehension of worldly things is esteemed to be correct, till one attains to right apprehension of soul.’

The author of the Vedānta-paribhāṣā expressly states, that, in the fourth quarter of this couplet, there is a contraction of ā-ātma-nischayāt. No one need doubt, that he is in the right. Laukikam, he likewise observes, points to practical apprehension of things of the world.
it is taken as a postulate—that, with the Vedāntins, Brahma excepted, all is nihility. In a way, indeed, a real existence is allowed to what is other than Brahma: but, inasmuch as all this has no more substantiality than nacreine silver, however the Vedāntins speak of it, how can we account it as, in any wise, existence? And, further, it has been made patent, that, according to the Vedāntins themselves, only from the standing point of practical existence is reality ascribable to the world; which, from the standing point of true existence, is devoid of reality of every kind and degree.

The Vedānta recognizes, as existent, an Īśvara, maker of the world, all-wise, and all-powerful; and souls, also, and their ignorance, their doing good and evil, their requital in Elysium and in Hell, and their transmigration. And, again, all these are regarded as non-existent, and as absolutely so. Neither are they, nor have they been, nor are they to be. Brahma alone exists—without qualities, and eternal. All besides—Īśvara, the world, and everything else—has but a false existence, and owes its being to imagination by ignorance. In very truth, it is nothing. Such, in a few words, is the creed of the Vedāntins.
CHAPTER II

Summary of the Vedānta System

Though the Vedāntins allege, that, from the standing point of the true state of existence, Brahma alone is real, and all else is unreal, still, from the standing point of the practical state of existence, Īśvara, souls, and the whole world, are real, that is to say, practically real, and distinct one from another.¹ Their system, therefore, branches into two divisions; one of which has to do with the practical state of existence, and the other, with the true state of existence. Great part of the first is seen in one or other of all the remaining Systems. Here, as in the Nyāya and in the Yoga, we find an omniscient and omnipotent Īśvara, framer and ruler of the external world.²

¹ And they have been distinct from all eternity. See the Sanskrit extract in p. 91.

² तथा चेष्टोगोत्तापिष्परमाध्यावेत्यावामीशिली-शित्त्याभावः प्रदर्श्यते । व्यवहारवेत्यायां तूक्तः श्रुतावपीश्वरा-दिव्यवहारः एष सर्वेष्वर एष मूलाधिपतिरेष्मूलपाल एष सेतु-
Pretty much as in the Sānkhya, and in the Yoga, we also here find statements of the order in which the world was developed. That which the Sānkhyas call nature, the Vedāntins call illusion, or ignorance. As for the internal organ, its affections, and many other articles, the Sānkhya and the Vedānta coincide to a large extent. In several particulars, however, they join issue. He that would acquaint himself fully with those particulars must have recourse to special treatises on the Vedānta. It is neither my desire, nor is it my intention, to treat the subject exhaustively; an examination of its essential features being sufficient for my present purpose. Again, like the rest of the Systematists, the Vedāntins receive the Veda, the Purāṇas, etc., as authoritative. They believe, likewise, in good and bad works, and that, to receive the favourable and unfavourable requital to which these give rise, souls must pass to Elysium.

विधरण एषां लोकानामसम्मेदायति | Śankara-Achārya’s

_Brahma-sūtra-bhāshya_, i. 2, MS: ‘And thus the absence, from the standing point of true existence, of a Ruler and ruled is likewise shown in the Iśvara-gitā... But from the standing point of practical existence, the Veda itself supports the notion of an Iśvara, etc., by the words “This is the lord of all; this, the sovereign of all beings, this, the protector of creatures; this, the preserving bridge against the disruption of the worlds.”’

By the Iśvara-gitā the Bhagavad-gitā is here meant; the passage omitted—two couplets, v. 14–15—being found there. In Śankara’s days the book now current under the title of Iśvara-gitā could not have existed. Its minute development of the Vedānta marks it, undeniably, as a recent composition.
and to Hell, and again and again take birth, so and forth To animadvert on the errors of the Vedānta doctrines as confined to the practical state of existence there is no need; as I have refuted them, by inclusion, in what I have written touching the Sāṅkhya and the Nyāya.

But entirely different from anything as yet encountered is the doctrine of the Vedāntins touching the true state of existence, as they phrase it. And this doctrine is summarized in this half couplet: ‘Brahma is true; the world is false; the soul is Brahma himself, and nothing other.’¹ As expanded and expounded by the advocates of the Vedānta, this quotation imports as follows. Brahma alone—a spirit; essentially existent, intelligence, and joy;²

¹ ब्रह्म सत्यं जगन्मिथ्या जीवो ब्रह्मेव नासपरः।

Who wrote this half-couplet is not known, though it is familiar to every Vedāntin. Selected here for its conciseness in expressing the substance of the Vedānta, it serves as text to all that follows this second chapter. Preceding it is the line.—

श्रोकार्यान प्रक्ष्यामि यदुक्तं प्रन्यकोटितिमि॥

‘In half a couplet I will declare that which is set forth in millions of volumes.’

² ‘In Sanskrit, sat, chit, and ānanda. All three words have numerous synonyms.

Chit, chaitanya, etc., ‘intelligence’, when applied to Brahma, are, as will be seen, equally deceptive with the bodha of the soul, professed in the Sāṅkhya. Brahma, we shall discover, is utterly destitute of all intelligence to which the name cannot rationally be allowed.
void of all qualities \(^1\) and of all acts,\(^2\) in whom there is no consciousness such as is denoted by ‘I’, ‘thou’, and ‘it’;\(^3\) who apprehends no person, or thing, nor is

\[1\text{मन्मते ब्रह्मानो द्वन्द्वाचारिणे} \quad गुणाश्रयऽवलं समवायिकारणलं वा द्वन्द्वाल्पितं तेतहमतं न हि निर्गुणाय ब्रह्मानो गुणाश्रयता नान्पि समवायिकारणता समवायासिद्धे} \quad \text{Vedānta-pari-bhāṣā, p. 18. ‘For, in my system, Brahma is not proved to be a substance. Thou holdest, that a substance is the substrate of qualities, or a samavāyu cause. But Brahma, being void of qualities, is not a substrate of qualities: nor is he a samavāyu cause; inasmuch as samavāyu is not established for an entity.’ }

See, for samavāya and samavāyi, pp. 127-36.

\[2\text{निकललं निष्क्रियं शांतं निस्वं निर्धनं} \quad \]

‘\text{Brahma is without parts, devoid of action, tranquil, irreproachable, emotionless.’}

This line is from the \text{Śvetāśvata Upanishad}. See the \text{Bibliotheca Indica, Vol. VII, p. 370.}

\[3\text{In the annexed passage, isolated spirit, i.e. spirit abstracted from all adjuncts originated by ignorance, such as the imagining the world, and so forth, is characterized:} \]

\[\text{असम्भवतः सर्वस्विन्न दिग्मम्याकाशःखपिण} \quad \]
\[\text{प्रकाशे यादशं रप प्रकाशस्यामलं भवेत} \quad \]
\[\text{त्रिजगतं लम्हं चेति द्रष्ये सत्तामुपागते} \quad \]
\[\text{द्रष्टः स्यातं केबलेमावस्ताहो विमलासमन:} \quad \]

\[\text{इति} \quad \text{Yoga-vāsishṭha, p. 107, of the Calcutta edition of 1851.} \]

‘As would be the pure essence of light, if all that is illuminated thereby—as space, the earth, and ether, were non-existent; so becomes the isolation of the pure-essenced beholder,
apprehended of any; ¹ who is neither parviscint nor

when the objects of apprehension—the three worlds, thou, and
I—all vanish into nothingness.'

By 'beholder' is meant knower, or apprehender. We have
seen how the Sánkhya\textsuperscript{a} attempt to justify their application
of this term to their purusha, and we shall soon see how
the Vedântins endeavour to make good its applicability to
Brahma. Both the purusha and Brahma are, really, un-
intelligent.

Vijnana Bhikshu, in citing this passage in the Sánkhya-
ganachana-bhâshya, p. 97, draws on a production notoriously
ultra-monistic, but he has there to do with a point on
which the Sánkhya and the Vedânta are quite agreed. On
that occasion there was no room for misconception at his
hands.

The Yoga-vâsishthi\textsuperscript{a}, though considered as the work of
Vâlmiki, and as a supplement to his Râmâyana, was doubtless
composed subsequently to the full development of the system
of Sánkara Āchârya.

¹ That Brahma apprehends no one and nought, will be
proved in the fifth chapter. That he is apprehended by no
one follows from the position, that all apprehension is an
affection of the internal organ; and Brahma, it is asserted,
ever comes within the cognizance of such affection. Even
the affection in the form of 'I am Brahma, essentially existent,
intelligence, and joy,' which immediately precedes emancipation,
does not cognize Brahma, but only removes the ignorance
that hides him. See the Vedânta-sâra, pp 21–23. Indeed,
that which is then cognized is not the true Brahma, but
only his shadow, the nearest approximation to him that is
apprehensible, on any terms, or at any time, by one destined
to be liberated, or actually liberated. Hence, when the
Vedântins affirm, that Brahma is inapprehensible and ineffable,
their meaning is not like our own, when we use such lan-
guage regarding God. We mean, that God cannot wholly, and
they mean that Brahma cannot at all, be known or described.
Nothing, it is said, that comes, or that can come, within
the scope of apprehension, is in any wise Brahma.
omniscient; neither parvipotent nor omnipotent;\(^1\) who has neither beginning nor end; immutable and indefectible—is the true entity. All besides himself, the entire universe, is false, that is to say, is nothing

\(^1\) Both Īśvara and the soul are held to be ignorance-imagined and false. See the note at pp. 218-19. Of the same character are all their attributes; the omniscience, omnipotence, etc., of the former, and the parviscience, parvipotence, etc., of the latter. These attributes cannot, therefore, appertain to Brahma. ‘Parviscient’ and ‘parvipotent’ literally translate the technical expressions alpājña and alpasaktinat.

प्रभुरेष सर्वविद्हं क्रपणोजगद्वेदद्रुतविद्वितानमिति।
प्रतिपद्धस्तिजिनमीति सद्रुतविद्विति न तद्द्रुतकम्।

'इति। From the Sankshepa-sāniraka, MS 'He is the all-knowing lord; I am a pitiful creature; this is the world, wonderful in expansion. That such conceptions should arise in the mind of one whose inner eye is blinded by darkness, is no matter of amazement.'

That Brahma does not possess omniscience, omnipotence, etc., will, further, be plain to any one who will read, in almost any body of Vedānta doctrine, the elucidation of the utterance 'That art thou', tat tvam asi, one of the twelve 'great sentences'.

The preceptor of the Vedānta, intending to instruct his pupil, that he is one with Brahma, is obliged, by reason that Brahma is inexpressible by language, to teach him, that he is one with Īśvara, an object apprehensible, and the entity that is nearest to Brahma the inapprehensible; and a being lifted far above humanity, as not being liable to misapprehend. The pupil is to think of Īśvara as shown of all attributes, and of himself as wanting all his own. The residual part of Īśvara, and that of himself—Brahma in both cases—he is to consider as unified. This also evinces, that the characteristics which severally contradistinguish Īśvara and soul do not belong to the essence of Brahma.
whatsoever. Neither has it ever existed, nor does it now exist, nor will it exist at any time future. And the soul is one with Brahma. Such is the doctrine of the Vedānta regarding the true state of existence; and it is denominated non-dualistic, as rejecting the notion of any second true entity.

And here some one may ask, how it is, that, if the external world is nothing, it presents itself as existing; and why it is, that, if the soul be Brahma, it is not aware of the fact, and, more than this, endures various miseries. The answer which the Vedāntins give to this is, that it is all due to the power of ignorance. This point I shall now enter upon with somewhat of detail.

The Vedāntins assert, that the external world originates from ignorance; in other words, it is all actually Brahma, but, by reason of ignorance, appears to us as the world. Just so, a rope lying in certain circumstances may be mistaken, by a man, for a snake. He calls it a snake, it not being so, however, but a rope: and so one may speak of the snake and the rope as being one. And yet it is not meant, that the rope has actually undergone a change, or has turned into a snake: it is a snake merely in semblance. As the rope is to the snake, so is Brahma to the world. When, therefore, the Vedāntins declare, that the world is Brahma, their meaning is not, that Brahma is actually transformed into the world, but that, in point of fact, the world is no entity; only Brahma presents himself as if the world. To use their technical phraseology, the world’s existence is not its own, but Brahma’s. Hence they designate Brahma as the
illusory-material cause of the world. He is not really a material cause, as clay is of the jar which is made out of it, but a substrate, as the rope is to the snake, or as nacre is to silver, in the stock illustrations of the system under description. The existence, the apparent existence, of the snake and of the silver depends on the existence of the rope and the nacre; and yet these are not in reality transmuted, respectively, into a snake and into silver. Such is the explanation of the term illusory-material cause. As for illusion, or ignorance, in it we have the world’s material cause,¹

¹ According to this, the world is the *vivarta*, or illusory effect, of Brahma, and the *parvāma*, or evolution, of illusion, *māyā*. These two expressions, as denoting acts, are thus explained:

परिणामो नाम उपादानसमस्ताकार्यपति: | विवर्ती नाम
उपादानविषयसमस्ताकार्यपति: | *Vedānta-paribhāṣā*, p. 11.

‘Evolution is the production of an effect which has the same kind of existence as its material cause. Illusory generation is the production of an effect which has an existence different in kind from that of its material, i.e. illusory-material, cause.’

It is stated, that some Vedāntins formerly maintained Brahma to be the material cause of the world. But, from the time of Śankara Āchārya, the dominant school of the Vedānta; has held, that Brahma is the world’s illusory-material cause.

न च विजातीयोरयुपादानोपादेयभावं भ्रमव अग्रादानेन स्यादिर्व वाच्यम | प्रपक्षश्चर्माधिशस्तनवस्पस्य तस्येष्ट्वात्
परिणामिलुप्योपादानवस्य निरवयवब्रह्मवण्युपस्वते: | तथा
च प्रपक्षस्य परिणाम्युपादानं माया न भ्रमवित सिद्धान्तः |
Ibid., p. 31. ‘Let it not be said, that, if, of two heterogeneous
and, from it, the world's name and form. Agreeably to the Vedānta, of these five, existence, intelligence, things, one may be a material cause, and the other a material effect, then Brahma himself may be the material cause of the world. For this, *Brahma as a material cause, is admitted for such in the sense of his being the substrate in misapprehension, of the world, i.e. the substrate of the world, the object misapprehended* since that material causativity which consists in evolving is impossible in Brahma, he being without parts. Thus, then, the established doctrine is, that the evolutional material cause of the world is illusion, not Brahma.'

Sankara Āchārya often interprets literally those passages of the Upamahādaṇḍas, etc., which seem to speak of Brahma as the world's evolutional material cause; but he prefers to understand them as setting forth the view which, since his time has generally, if not universally, been adopted by Vedāntins. Sankara's opinion may be learned from what follows:

ननु सोपादानस्तक्षादि प्रासादादीन सृजतीति युक्ते निध्रुप- दानस्वालम कथं लोकान्त सृजता इति। नायं दोषः। सलिलष्ठानीयोतेषुर्वपेश्वयाक्ते आत्मीक्षिद्वच्चयेवयं छल्फेनस्थानीयस्य जगत उपादानभूते सम्भवः। तस्मादात्मभूतनामहृदयोपादानः सन् सर्वशो जगन्न निर्मितीते इति न वियुक्तम्। अथवा यथा विज्ञान- वान मायावी निष्पादान आत्मानमेवासत्मान्तरवेनास्तकाशे गच्छन्नित्रिनिर्मितो तथा सर्वशो देवः सर्वशक्तिमहामय आत्मानमेवास- सत्मान्तरवेन जगद्रप्यो निर्मितीते इति युक्ततम्।

Commentary on the Aitareya-upamahādaṇḍa: Bibliotheca Indica, Vol. VII, pp. 175–6. “‘A carpenter, or similar artificer, possessed of material, constructs a house, or the like. This is all right, or intelligible. But how can the spirit, which is without material, create the worlds?’ This is no valid objection. Like the
joy, name, and form, the first three belong to Brahma, and the other two to illusion. The existence, intelligence, and joy, which appear to be found in all things in the universe, are from Brahma, the illusory-material foam, a thing developed, existing potentially in water, the universe can exist in its material cause, known as pure spirit, formless, and undeveloped. Therefore, it is not incongruous to think, that the omniscient, himself the material cause of names and forms, should create the universe. Otherwise, and preferably: as a dexterous juggler without material produces himself as it were another self travelling in the air, so the omniscient Deva, or Isvara being omnipotent and great in illusion, creates himself as it were another self in the form of the universe.'

Such is the construction put, by Sankara and by all his discipular successors, on texts of the Hindu scriptures where Brahma is mentioned as a material cause. And to this construction the Vedantins are constrained, as they would render consistent either their own tenets or the Upanishads themselves. For the Upanishads again and again describe Brahma as being without parts, and as unchangeable. and this notion would be contravened by that of his being an evolutilional material cause. Such being the case, in disputing with Vedantins nowadays, one will gain nothing by indicating to them, that the prevailing doctrines of their school are out of harmony with those which obtained of yore. Their own doctrines, they will reply, do not conflict with those of their predecessors, but only unfold and supplement them. One may find, in the Upanishads, passages inculcating, that the world is an evolution from illusion, and many such things favourable to the position, that Brahma is the world's illusory-material cause only; and the pandits will urge, and perhaps justly, that, in arriving at their conclusions, they but use different texts for mutual explanation.

\[अस्यं भाति प्रियं छपं नाम चेत्यांशपश्चाक्रमं।
आचं तथं ब्रह्मचपं मायाभ्यं ततो द्वयम्॥\]
cause of the universe; as the existence of nacreine silver is from nacre, the illusory-material cause of the fancied silver. Name and form, appertaining to the universe and its contents, are from illusion, the world’s material cause.¹

The inconsistency and fatuity of the Vedānta, on the point under discussion, are most bewildering to the reader. In the first place, he will inquire what is the nature of illusion, also called ignorance. If, he will say, it is that by reason of which the unreal world presents itself as real—at the manner of nacre appearing to be silver—it must be misconception: and how can this be the world’s material cause? And, if it be a material cause, and if the world was made out of it, as a jar is made of a clay, why are

¹ There are five parts predicall: is, appears, is delightsome, form, and name. The first three are of Brahma; the remaining two, of illusion.

This couplet is cited anonymously in the Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 36. Jagad-rūpaṁ is there given, erroneously, for māyā-rūpaṁ.¹

¹ The Vedāntins, when they speak of existence and joy as appearing in external things, are intelligible; since those things are apprehended as existent, and are supposed to minister delight. But how can intelligence be said to appear in all external things, as in a jar, for instance? The explanation of our philosophers is, that, inasmuch as such things appear, their appearing is a sign that they are connected with intelligence.

Thus: घट: सन् घटोभाति घट इष्ट इत्यादिलोकिकाक्यमचन्द्रशिरपि सचिदानन्दश्रृङ्गसैकवाध्यायसात् | Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 35.

¹ The conventional expressions, "A jar is", "A jar appears", "A jar is desirable", etc., are also from imagining oneness, with the jar, of Brahma—existent, intelligence, and joy.'
the name and form of the world said to be false? I reply, that the difficulty thus expressed is incapable of solution. The Vedāntins are herein most inconsistent. In some respects their 'ignorance' looks like misconception; and still they will not name it so, but the cause of misconception,¹ nay, of the whole world: for they describe it as being, like the Sānkhya 'nature' a complex of the three guṇas and the world's material cause.² Furthermore, they denominate it the power of Īsvara.³ These assertions of theirs have little congruity with each other.

Another perplexity is offered to the reader, in their comparison of Brahma and the world to nacre and to nacrine silver severally. That comparison, he must of necessity think, could not be intended, by the Vedāntins, to be taken in its strict literality. For they cannot mean, he will say, that the ignorant mistake Brahma for the world, just as a man labouring under misapprehension mistakes nacre for silver. Brahma, he will object, is invisible: how, then, can he become an object of vision, and be mistaken for the world? Moreover, though a man who takes nacre for silver misconceives, yet the form before his eyes is not a

¹ This will be shown in the seventh chapter.
² इमानि भूतानि तिरुगुणमायाकार्यतिर्मित्रुगुणात्मकानि।
Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 36. 'These elements are composed of the three guṇas, because effects of illusion, itself composed of the three guṇas.'
³ See the Vedānta-sūtra, p. 4; where, in a citation from some Upanishad, illusion (māyā)—termed ajnāna in the textbook—is denominated devātmaśakti, 'the proper power of Deva, or Īsvara.'
false form, but that of nacre, or, rather, nacre itself. Similarly, if it be held, that ‘ignorant’ men take Brahma to be the world, though their so taking him would be a mistake, it must likewise be believed, that this world, visible, tangible, unintelligent, and changeable, is Brahma; in other words, that Brahma has these qualities. Let it be granted, that the name of the world is false, still, how can its form be so? 

Difficulties such as these would certainly suggest themselves to a person of discrimination; and they are insoluble. At the same time it is true, that the comparison lately mentioned is adduced in Vedānta treatises of the highest credit, and with the design that its literal import should be accepted.¹ We find

¹ To the objection, that Brahma, not being an object of vision, cannot be mistaken for the visible world, this reply is returned by the Vedāntin: न च नीद्रपस्य श्रद्धण: कथं चालकवादिनिविषयतेति बाच्यम् | नीद्रपस्यापि भपादे: प्रयक्तविषयतवान् | Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p 18. "How can Brahma, the colourless be the object of visual or other perception?" Let not this be asked; for colour and such other things, though colourless, are objects of perception.'

It is a maxim of all the Hindu schools, that qualities have themselves no qualities; and hence colour is colourless. Therefore, implies the writer here cited, if the possession of colour were a condition indispensable to perceptibility, colour would be invisible. Sophistry such as this could scarcely be matched. But the objector, probably a Naiyāyika, who is thus answered, maintains, that the condition specified holds only in respect of substance, not in respect of quality; for quality is perceived through substance. To this it is rejoined, that Brahma is denied to be substantial, and that, consequently, the condition
it asserted there, that, when a man mistakes nacre for silver, false silver is actually produced over the nacre. The nacre is the substrate of the silver, and is called its illusory-maternal cause; while ignorance is said to be its material cause. Analogously, in the estimation of the Vedāntins, Brahma is universally diffused; and over portions of him, the world, a thing of falsity, is actually produced: \(^1\) Brahma is its substrate, and its
does not apply to him. And again, though it were granted, that Brahma is substantial, still, like time, which also wants colour, he could be the object of visual and other perception. How time can be such an object, the Vedāntin only knows.

\(^1\) In the Vedānta-panbhāṣā, p 6, we read, that, in perception, the object perceived becomes non-different from the subject of right notion; but that, in inference, etc., the object does not become so. The author's explanation is this. Non-difference from the subject of right notion does not here mean oneness with it, but the non-possession of an existence distinct from that of such subject. To exemplify: since a jar is imagined in the intelligence which is appropriated to it, the very existence of the jar-appropriated intelligence—technically called the object-intelligence—is the existence of the jar. For it is not admitted, that the existence of an imagined thing differs from that of its substrate: तथाहि घटादे सावन्त्चिन्चेतन्ये—
स्थायत्या विषयचेतन्यस्तिव घटादिस्तत्ता अधिष्ठात्सत्तातिति
कारोपितसत्ताया अनजीकारत । Thus it is shown how the object of perception is non-different from the object-intelligence. It remains to show how that object becomes non-different from the intelligence which is the subject of right notion. Intelligence appropriated to the internal organ is called the subject of right notion. When an organ of sense, as the eye, impinges upon an object, the internal organ is said to evolve, to be emitted through the eye, to pretend itself to the object, and
illusory-material cause; and ignorance is its material cause. The world, thus, is false; and, therefore, so to be transformed into its shape. This transformed portion of the internal organ is known as an affection. Vide ut supra, p. 4. Along with the internal organ the intelligence thereto appropriated is produced to the object perceived; that is to say, as the dimensions of that organ are amplified by the evolution, which remains continuous with the source of evolution, so increase the limits of the intelligence appropriated to the organ in question; for intelligence being assumed as all-pervading, it cannot be said, literally, to have motion. On a jar being brought within a house, the jar-appropriated ether and the house-appropriated ether become one, they being supposed distinct, so long as the jar was outside of the house. Similarly, when the internal organ reaches its object, the intelligence appropriated to that organ becomes one with the object-intelligence, and, since the object is non-different from the object-intelligence, it becomes one with the intelligence appropriated to the internal organ, which intelligence is the subject of right notion. This does not, however, take place in inference; for, inasmuch as, there, the object does not come into contact with an organ of sense, the internal organ is not thought to be drawn out to that object through an organ of sense. Consequently, as the intelligence appropriated to the internal organ does not reach the spot occupied by the object intelligence, the two do not become one, nor does the object of inference become non-different from the subject of right notion.

From this it is plain, that a portion of Brahma, a portion designated as object-intelligence, is considered, by the Vedântins, to be external to the beholder, and to take up a determinate space; in which portion of Brahma a jar, for instance, is imagined, through ignorance, to exist. In this exemplification, Brahma and jar are precisely analogous to nacre and the silver for which it is mistaken.

Corresponding language will be found in the Vedântâ-pari-bhâshâ, p. 11, where it is expressed, that it is not the whole of intelligence that serves as substrate to apparent silver, but only so much of it as is appropriated to the present nacre.
are its name and form. Its existence in one way is false, and, in another way, is true: the former, when it is viewed as the world; the latter, when it is viewed as Brahma.\(^1\) Hence the Vedántins maintain, that the world is false; and, at the same time, that it is identical with Brahma, inasmuch as it is Brahma himself that, owing to ignorance, appears as the world.

As on all other topics, so on that of the nature of soul, the Vedánta doctrine presents a variety of opinions. The principal, of which all the rest are modifications, are these two.\(^2\) Some say, that a portion of Brahma, or of the pure spirit, appropriated to the internal organ, constitutes the soul;\(^3\) others, that it is a reflexion of Brahma in the internal organ.\(^4\) It

Though nacre is, in a certain sense, viewed as the substrate of nacrine silver, yet Brahma also, the substrate of everything practical and apparent, is so, and in a truer sense, by virtue of his being the sole veritable entity.

It should never for a moment be forgotten, that, with the Vedántins, intelligence always means Brahma.

1 If it be asked, whether the existence apprehended in such a cognition as ‘A jar is’ be that which belongs to Brahma, and is true, or that which belongs to the world, and is false; the Vedántin’s answer is two-fold, according to two several theories. The first theory is, that it is Brahma’s true existence which is there cognized; the second, that it is the world’s false existence. See the two passages from the Vedánta-paribhāshā, cited at pp. 237–8.

2 Named, respectively, avachchhinna-vāda and pratibimbā-vāda.

3 The Sanskrit is: जीवो नाम अन्तःकरणाविचित्रं चैतन्यम् \(\text{Vedánta-paribhāshā, p. 8.}\)

4 तस्य \(\ast \ast \ast \) अन्तःकरणेऽ प्रतिबिंबं जीवचैतन्यम् \(\text{Vedánta-paribhāshā, p. 41. The tasya, ‘his,’ refers to the pure Brahma, mentioned just previously.}\)
will be made evident, in the sequel, that on close examination, the internal organ, taken by itself, is found to possess, in the tenets of the Vedāntins, those characteristics which are referable to the soul, and by which we recognize the soul as such. The views in question, of what makes up the soul, are always inculcated as just described; and yet the importation into them of the Brahma-element, or reflexion of Brahma, is altogether deceptive. And this Brahma-element, or the reflexion of Brahma, it is taught, is not the adjective part of the soul, but its substantive part. This opinion the Vedāntins, building on a maxim which will be cited in the fifth chapter, and recurred to in the seventh, believe themselves justified in entertaining.

When these theories, as has been said, are thoroughly scrutinized, the soul turns out to be the internal organ. And, if it be so, or even if it be a reflexion of Brahma, can it be one with him? The answer, in consonance with Vedānta notions, to this interrogatory will be seen in the seventh chapter.

With reference to the soul, the Vedāntins hold, that,

The theory of reflexion is to be understood in its strict material literality. This appears from the subjoined objection and its answer: न च िपहीनस्य ब्रह्मणो न प्रतिबिम्बसम्भवः
िपवत एव तथावदर्शानिदिति बाच्यम्। नोिपस्यारिपि िपस्य प्रतििबिम्बदर्शानात्।
Ibid., p. 42. ‘‘A reflexion of Brahma, he being colourless, cannot be; for it, a reflexion, is seen of that only which has colour.’ Let not this be asserted; since a reflexion is seen of colour, itself colourless.’
though it is Brahma, yet, being subject to illusion, or ignorance, it has forgotten its true nature, and, looking upon the internal organ and the body as real, and identifying itself with them, considers itself to be man, or the like. And, although all things in vicissitudinous life are false, from ignorance soul thinks them true, and calls some of them mine, and the rest others', and imagines that some things make it happy, and that others render it miserable. It being thus, there arise, in the soul, desire and aversion, in consequence of which it engages in good works and in bad. Afterwards, to receive the requital of those works, it has to pass to Elysium, or to Hell, and to take birth repeatedly. All these experiences and mutations are, to be sure, false:¹ but, nevertheless, they seem to it as true; and hence is all its wretchedness.

Again, the Vedāntins, like the other Systematists, maintain, that the soul has been, from all eternity, in the bondage of illusion. They do not say, that illusion, or ignorance, came into being at some particular period, and took the soul captive. For, if it thus had origin, it would be necessary to assign a cause of its origin; and, besides, even after being

¹ शरीरं स्वर्गमेका बन्धस्मृतेऽन्य तथां।
कल्पनामालम्बैतत्त विं में कार्यं चिदात्मनः॥

'The body, Elysium, Hell, and so both bondage and liberation, are but mere imagination. What, then, have I, essentially intelligence, to do with them?'

This couplet was supplied by a learned Vedāntin, and was referred, by him, to the Ashtavakra-gītā, second canto.
emancipated, it might, in consequence of the production of some new ignorance, incur jeopardy of being taken captive afresh. On this ground they allege, that illusion has existed from beyond all duration of time,¹ and that, co-eternally with it, the soul has been enthralled, and will thus continue until emancipated. But how is this notion, that illusion has always existed, reconcilable with the position, that, besides Brahma, one without a second, nothing ever has been, or is, or is to be? What, further, becomes of the position, that Brahma is, in his nature, eternally pure, intelligent, and free? For the soul is Brahma, and yet, having been in bondage to illusion from all eternity, is impure and unintelligent. With a view to repel these objections, the Vedāntins declare, that illusion is a thing of so peculiar a character, that at once neither does it exist nor does it not exist. It cannot be said to be, inasmuch as it does not possess true existence. On the other hand, it cannot be said not to be, inasmuch as it possesses the existence called apparent.² This is what they

¹ See the first foot-note at p. 49
² Practical and apparent existence, it has been shown, do not at all differ from each other, as regards reality, or falsity. Hence, it is all one, in effect, whether the Vedāntins call a thing practical, or whether they call it apparent. The author confesses, that he has seen no passage to support him in classing illusion among apparent objects; nor would he spontaneously have thought of thus classing it. The authority of an eminent Vedāntin led him to take the view here assumed as correct. The fact, that illusion never comes into play in practical transactions, may have induced the Vedāntins to consider it as apparent.
mean in saying, that 'Illusion cannot be set forth as being either existent or non-existent.'

By this device they would preserve intact the dogma of non-duality, and also make out Brahma to be, in his nature, ever pure, intelligent, and free, and at the same time would account for the thralldom of the soul, and its consequent round of trials. For illusion, though it has apparent existence, has not really real existence; and so the dogma of monism suffers no injury. Again, though illusion has not really real existence, yet it possesses apparent existence; and so it is capable of taking the soul captive. And again, the Vedantins say, that, as illusion is only apparent, so the soul's being fettered is practical; that is, as illusion is false, so the soul's being fettered is likewise false. Neither was the soul ever actually fettered, nor is it now fettered, not has it to be emancipated.

1 अझानं तु सदस्यामिनिवर्चनोयम्। Vedānta-sāra, p. 4.

नासदृष्ण न सदृष्ण प्रवल। सविविशालिता मिध्यांइता सनातनी।

This couplet is cited, as from the Āditya-purāṇa, by Vijnāna Bhikshu, in the Yoga-vārttika-bhāṣyā, MS fol. 79, verso.

'Illusion is, by nature, neither a nonentity, nor an entity, nor, indeed, both combined. It is not describable either as existent or as non-existent: it is false, and it is eternal.'

2 बन्धं च प्रेक्षं च उद्धर्द्धं बुद्धं मूढः बुद्धर्धर्द्धं वस्तुनि कल्पयति।

इद्गारितं मेघक्रतं रवि यथा यतोद्दयास्त्रं चिदेश्वद्वरम्।

* * * * * *
Accordingly, I warn my readers against being misled by the notions, so prevalent among the vulgar, that, according to the Vedānta, Brahma was once void of qualities, and then, assuming them, made the world:

न निरोधो न चोत्पतितिन्वद्वरे न च साधकः।
न सुभक्षुन्ने वै भुत्त इत्येषा परमात्माः।

These verses are from the Viveka-chūḍāmani, which is ascribed to Śankara Āchārya.

'The foolish groundlessly imagine in the true entity, i.e. Brahma, bondage and emancipation, which appertain to the intellect, or internal organ, here; as they attribute the evil before the eyes, caused by clouds, to the sun itself, under the idea, that the sun is darkened, for that, Brahma, is intelligence secondless, unaffected by aught, and indefectible.'

* * * * *

'Destruction is not, nor, again, origination, nor is any bound, or, yet, taking measures to be liberated; nor is there any aspirant after emancipation, or any one emancipated. Such is the truth.'

The second of these couplets occurs, as of his own composition, in what passes for the commentary of Gaudapāda on the Māṇḍūkya-upamāṇa. See the Bibliotheca Indica, Vol. VIII, p. 432.

सिद्धस्येव ब्रह्मद्वस्त मोक्ष्यायसिद्धविरर्मण तत्साधने
प्रेरितपतिः। Vedānta-paribhāsha, p. 47. 'Through emancipation, Brahma himself, already has place, yet the mistaking it for non-existent can account for taking action to bring it about.'

Mark the fallacy of this. Spirit, ever emancipated, and free from bondage, is likewise ever warranted from misapprehension, an affection of the internal organ, which organ is unemancipated from eternity to eternity. In this misreasoning, and in the language in which it is couched, the Vedāntins and the Sānkhyas are completely at unity.
and that some small portion of the pure, Brahma parted from him, got deluded by illusion, and then became souls, which souls, when they free themselves from illusion, will be united to Brahma, etc. The teachers of the Vedânta do not allege, that Brahma was once void of qualities, and subsequently, taking them upon him, formed the universe; but they allege, that to be without them has ever distinguished him, and ever will distinguish him.\(^1\) Equally, his possession of qualities, and his operating the origin, continuance, destruction, etc., of the world, are from everlasting; for herein the Vedânta is consentient with the other Systems. But his having no qualities is true (pāramārthika), and his having qualities is practical. The former is really real: whereas the other is not so; it arising simply from the imputation, by the ignorant, to Brahma, of what does not belong to him. Nor is it asserted, that, at some period, a part of Brahma was separated off, fell into the snare of illusion, and became soul. The accredited doctrine is, that neither Brahma nor any portion\(^2\) of him can ever be

---

\(^1\) See the passage cited at p. 49. Among the six things there reckoned as beginningless, the pure Brahma is included. Often in most Vedânta writers, but with especial frequency in the works of Śankara Āchārya, the epithet of 'ever and essentially pure, intelligent, and free,' nitya-suddha-buddha-mukta-vabhā-vam, is found applied to Brahma.

Buddha is here metonymical; since, in strictness, Brahma is held to be bodha, 'intelligence,'—not 'intelligent'.

\(^2\) Pure Brahma, it is maintained, is without parts. In the Māndūkya-upanishad, Brahma is spoken of as of four parts; three, as the soul (jīvātmā), which experiences three states, those of waking, dreaming, and sleeping insensibly; and one,
truly beguiled by illusion. And yet the soul has always been what it is, distinct from Brahma, and has always been ensnared by illusion, or ignorance, coeval with itself. Nevertheless, the soul is Brahma, and always has been so, and wherever it is found called a part of Brahma, such language is used only from the standing point of practical existence. Strictly speaking, the soul, in the sense in which it

as pure Brahma. Ananda Giri thus introduces two sentences of Śāṅkara Ācārya, where commenting on the passage adverted to.

आत्मनो निरक्ष्यवस्य पादद्यामपि नोपपयते पादचतुष्ययं तु दूरे-स्तारितामि शाङ्के | कथामिति | परमार्थायत्तूष्यपात्तचामार्थिपि काल्पनिकमयायोपेयमूते पादचतुष्ययमविष्कृतमित्यभ्यासवब्यां पादं न्युत्पादयति | आहेव्यादिनः | Bibliotheca Indica, Vol. VIII, p. 340. 'Of the impartite spirit not even two portions can be predicated; still less, four. This is meant by "How," etc. Though, in truth, it has not four portions, still an imaginary quaternion of portions, consisting partly of means and partly of end, is not incongruous. With this in view, the first portion of Brahma is etymologized as follows: "He says," etc.'

1 Were it otherwise, Brahma would be changeable; and, in the Vedānta, he is esteemed to be unchangeable.

अयं चात्मिक्यन्नामाब्दोधिकरणस्य सादिवे सादिः यथा घटे पत्रधे: | अधिकरणस्यानानादिलेक्षनादिरेव यथा जीवे ब्रह्मधे: ब्रह्मणि वा जीवधे: | Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 32

'And this mutual non-existence, or non-identity, when its substrate is originated, is itself originated; as the non-identity of cloth in a jar. If the substrate is beginningless, so is the non-identity; as that of Brahma in the soul, or that of the soul in Brahma.'
is Brahma, is not so merely as a part of him, but as the whole; and, in the sense in which it is not Brahma, it is no part of Brahma regarded as a whole, but is entirely distinct from him. Nay, rather than speak of it as being distinct from Brahma, it ought to be said, simply, that it is not Brahma. For, from the aspect from which it is not Brahma, Brahma does not exist at all: and how, then, can it be spoken of as distinct from Brahma? The case is like that of nacreine silver, when thought to be genuine silver: it not being, to the beholder, nacre at all; wherefore he will not say, that it is distinct from nacre. In the same way, pure Brahma, contemplated from the standing point of practical existence, has no existence whatever: there is no Brahma, except him that has qualities, or Ḩīvara, the maker of the world; to which are to be added the world and souls, all quite separate one from another. From that point of view, it is, then, wrong to speak of the soul as being separate from the pure Brahma. Therefore, though the soul, from the standing point of practical existence, has always existed as soul, from the standing point of true existence, it has always been veritibly Brahma. And, though the soul has always been Brahma, yet neither to Brahma, nor to any part of him, has there ever attached, or can there ever attach, in any way, the least ignorance or alterability. Evermore, in his nature, does he remain altogether pure, intelligent, and free.

From all this it will be patent to the reader, that the Vedāntin not only holds the ignorance-imagined world, and its maker, Ḩīvara, to be practical and
false, but maintains, also, that the imaginer of the world and of its maker, namely, ignorance, is apparent and false. The imagining the world and its maker is that which makes soul to be soul; and hence the soul, as soul, is practical and false: the one Brahma, in his nature ever pure, intelligent, and free, alone is true. If, then, it be asked, how it can be, that the soul has, from all eternity, been in captivity to ignorance, and yet is Brahma; he being, however, unchangeably pure: the answer is, that, assuredly, it cannot be, only the misguided Vedântins think that it can. Ignorance, by reason of which the soul, the world, and Íśvara appear, according to them, to exist, they believe to be false, that is, to be nothing; and, of course, there is nothing that can derive impurity or change to Brahma. This will be clearly explained, over and over again, in coming chapters; and so it is unnecessary to dwell on it further on this occasion. And it is highly material that the reader should take notice, that the tenet of the falseness of ignorance is the very key-stone of the Vedânta, and must never be lost from view for a single moment. In constantly recurring to it, as I do in this book, I may be supposed, to lay myself open to the charge of tedious and useless repetition. The tenet referred to is, however, not only one of paramount moment, but also difficult to grasp and to retain; and, if it be not mastered, the Vedânta is impossible to be understood.

Further, I would beg the reader to believe, that the Vedânta, however perspicuously expounded, is most bewildering. Some of my own countrymen, and
foreigners, in particular, if they read what I write, may conclude, as the result of a hasty glance, that I have set down many things without having grounds for them, and that I have spun enigmas out of my own brains. All such I entreat to avoid a hasty judgement, and to go through my volume patiently and attentively. They will then, I suspect, change their minds. If, in one place where it is looked for, my authority for a statement be found wanting, it will be seen produced elsewhere, and more appropriately; and, if I do not solve all objections as fast as they arise, still I trust, that a careful perusal of my entire treatise will leave few doubts undispelled.

And now I wish to mention one or two things that are very likely to occur to foreigners who give their attention to the Vedānta and the other Hindu Systems. In the first place, there are many expressions, in the treatises on these systems, the precise sense of which they will not apprehend; and, in the second place, when they come upon glaring absurdities and incongruities, refusing to see them in their true light, they will give them such a turn as to render everything most reasonable and excellent. Whoso would acquaint himself with the philosophical opinions peculiar to a strange country, should by no means content himself with simply reading a book or two, whether by himself, or with aid, and then at once set to theorizing about them. If he wishes to understand those opinions really and thoroughly, he must apply himself perseveringly, for several years, to the study of works in which they are set forth; and he must mix familiarly with the people who profess them, until,
by frequent converse, he learns how those people are affected and influenced by their views, and he must hear them speak about them without constraint, and spontaneously. In short, he must, as it were, become one of themselves; and then, and not till then, can he certify himself, that he has actually got at the true purport and import of their belief. Leaving this digression, I shall address myself to what remains to be said on the Vedānta doctrine of the soul.

According to the Vedāntins, when the soul, bound by illusion, becomes convinced, that the world is false, and that itself is Brahma, existent, intelligence, and joy, it escapes from further vicissitude, and realizes Brahmahood. But, even after the acquisition of this knowledge, the soul has to tenant the body, till it exhausts the experience of its fructescent works; and so long it cannot evade happiness and misery. This experience exhausted, it obtains disembodied isolation, plenary emancipation. In thus determining, the Vedānta is in unison with all the other Systems; and also in prescribing purity of intellect as indispensable to emancipative knowledge. This purity is the fruit of good works, such as repetition of sacred names, austerities, and pilgrimage, kept up during several births.¹ In order to gaining emancipative knowledge,

¹तच च ज्ञान पापक्षयात स च कर्मानुभावादिति परम्परया कर्मेण विनियोगः। Vedānta-paribhāsha, p. 49. ‘And this right apprehension is obtainable by one after elimination of sin; and this elimination results from performance of good works. Thus is the connexion, mediately, of works with right apprehension.’
the practice of devotion likewise is prescribed. The accounts of Īśvara, found in the Purāṇas and other books, as that he assumed the forms of Vishṇu, Śiva, etc., and achieved various actions, are also respected by the Vedāntins;¹ who, again, hold it proper to go through the sacrifices and other ceremonies enjoined in the Veda. They declare, however, like the other Systematists, that, if a man estranges himself from the world, and gives himself wholly to spiritual studies and exercises, and becomes an ascetic, he must desist from all ritualism. Still they do not impugn the ceremonial portion of the Veda as folly. Notwithstanding the ritual renunciation of the ascetic, as has been mentioned, it is not deemed improper for him to engage in mental devotion addressed to Vishṇu, Mahādeva, and other first-class deities, forms of Īśvara. Whoever, therefore, hearing, that the Vedāntins believe in Brahma without qualities, infer, that they reject Vishṇu, Śiva, and the rest of the pantheon, and that they discountenance idolatry and such things, and that they count the Purāṇas and similar writing false, labours under gross error.²

¹ स च परमेश्वर एकोदिपि स्थोपाधिशुल्मायानिश्चत्वरजस्तमस्तमो-गणमेतदेन ब्रह्मविषुमहेश्वरादिशुद्वभाविताः समते। Vedānta-paribhāshā, p. 9. ‘And this supreme Īśvara, though one, yet, because of the difference between the gunas—goodness, passion, and darkness—belonging to illusion, his, Īśvara's, associate, receive, the appellations of Brahma, Vishṇu, Mahēśvara, etc.’

² Śankara Acharya, while engaged in refuting the Bhāgavatās, confines himself to the doctrinal moiety of their system, where that moiety is discrepant from the Vedānta, and acknowledges as commendable the whole of its ritualism. His words are these:
Regarded from the standing point of practical existence, these are all real authoritative. From the standing point of true existence, all things, including even the Upanishads, the source of the Vedānta faith, are looked upon as false. Such are the leading dogmas of the Vedānta.

‘What you Bhāgavatas here allege, to wit, that Nārāyana—known to transcend the unmanifested, nature; the supreme Spirit; one with all—has of himself exhibited himself in various divisions, is not controverted. For, from “He becomes one, he becomes two-fold”, and other scriptures, the manifoldness of manifestation of the supreme Spirit is gathered. Moreover, the religious service, prosecuted incessantly, and with undistracted attention, of that adorable one, consisting in pious resort, etc., which is inculcated by you, is not objected to; by reason, as is well known, that there is injunction of devotion to Īśvara in the Veda and Śrīritis.

The reader, if curious about the particulars of the mode of worship in vogue among the Bhāgavatas, may consult Colebrookes’ Miscellaneous Essays, Vol. I, p. 416. Elucidations will there be seen of the terms abhīgamana, upādāna, ijjā, svādhyyāyā, and yogā, as employed by those sectaries.'
CHAPTER III

Examination of the Vedānta Views concerning the Supreme Spirit.

The first article of the Vedānta creed, as it has been given, is, that 'Brahma is true'. However, the Vedāntins, in denying all qualities to him, render him such, that it is impossible to prove his existence. When they hear us ascribe to the Supreme Spirit intelligence, will, power, and other attributes, and speak of Him as Maker of the world, they silently deride us, in the conviction, that we are lamentably ignorant: for our views, to their thinking, impute imperfection to Him, in giving Him qualities; and they suppose, that we, at the best and furthest, stop short at Īśvara, and make no approach to the pure Brahma beyond. But they do not consider, that such a Supreme Spirit as they contend for cannot be proved to exist. From the world, an effect, it must be inferred, that it had an efficient cause: hence God, its Maker. By what argumentation can one establish the existence of a being transcending Him, a being not a maker? Moreover, I would ask the Vedāntin in what sort we charge imperfection on the Supreme Spirit, in ascribing
to Him such attributes as omnipotence and omniscience? And, if Brahma be void of all qualities, on what ground is he supposed to be ulterior to the Creator? For a being without qualities, if conceivable, cannot be deemed either excellent or otherwise. But, waiving this, it is certain, as was said, that Brahma without qualities cannot be proved an entity. Perception tells us nothing of him; and inference teaches us no more, since he has no relation with anything. For, agreeably to the Vedāntin's definition, Brahma is related to nothing, either as cause, or in any other way.

It might be supposed, by some, that, since the Vedāntins call Brahma the substrate of the world, it is wrong to say, that they deny his relativity. I reply, that the sublime conception, that God is the state of the world, is indeed, most true. But neither true nor sublime is the notion of the Vedāntins, that Brahma is the world's substrate. They mean, that he is so, just as nacre is the substrate of fancied silver. As nacre is mistaken for silver, so is Brahma mistaken for the world. Again, let it be ever kept in mind, that, by the Brahma whom the Vedāntins called the world's substrate, or illusory-material cause, is ordinarily meant, not the pure Brahma, now under discussion, but Brahma the illusion-appropriated, or illusion-associated, ¹ Isvara, who is ignorance-imagined and false.

¹ ब्रह्मैव घटायुपादानं तत्त्व मयोपपहितस्य चैतन्यस्य सकल-घटायुचित्तालेन । Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 44. 'Brahma himself
The Vedāntins are, however, forced to look upon the pure Brahma also as the ultimate substrate of all. Since Brahma the illusion-associated, and likewise the illusion which is his associate, are ignorance-imagined and false, a substrate must be found for them, and it can be found, we are told, in the pure Brahma,¹ and nowhere else. But this pure Brahma is not held to be, consciously, and by virtue of his will and power, the cause of the universe to which he stands in the relation of substrate.² So well-known, in fact, is it, that Brahma has no activity, is the material cause, i.e. the illusory-material cause, of a jar, or the like; for this illusion-associated intelligence extends to all jars, and so forth.'

¹ See the extract from Ānanda Giri at p. 264.
² As is stated in the text, the Vedāntins ordinarily speak of the illusion-associated Brahma, Īśvara, as the world’s illusory-material cause; but, it must be understood it is his pure-Brahma portion that is held to be so. The illusory-material cause of the world—which world is reckoned false—must be a true entity; and, inasmuch as the illusion-associated Brahma, as such, is false, and so the world likewise, he cannot, as associated with illusion, be its illusory-material cause. The Vedāntins are compelled to maintain, that his pure-Brahma portion is, here, alone to be taken account of. On other occasions, however, all that is predicated of this being, Īśvara, is referred to his illusion-portion; as, for instance, the conscious and efficient causativity of the world, omniscience, omnipotence, etc., etc. अविद्या नाम विद्यानिवयात्निर्वचनी-यात्नादिभावब्रुपति वक्ष्यते । तद्विद्यास्वद्य तजजस्तो वृत्तिविशेष: परमेश्वरस्येद्वातासुप्रात्यविश्व: | Vedānta-sikhāmani, MS fol. 2, verso. "Nescience", as will be declared, is a beginningless entity, not to be described as true, or as unreal, and eliminable
will, and other qualities, that it ought not to be expected of me to adduce authority for what I assert. However, I will quote a passage in proof. The author of the Sankshepa-sārīraka, after battling along with the Gaišeshikas on the point in question, thus delivers his own doctrine: 'Moreover, from the son of Ánakadundubhi—announced in the Veda; outreach-

by science, i.e. right apprehension. And its “play” is a certain affection therefrom produced, in the shape of the supreme Íśvara’s beholding, or apprehension, will, and activity; by which three Íśvara makes the world.'

Similarly, the limited apprehension, will, activity, etc., of Brahma appropriated to the internal organ, in other words, of soul, are referred to the soul’s internal-organ portion, not to its Brahma-portion.

Hence, when the Vedántins, ascribe illusory-material causativity to the illusion-associated Brahma, they consider him as indeed a conscious and efficient cause; but since, only as illusion-associated, he is such a cause—namely, since conscious and efficient causativity appertains to his illusion-portion only—as a conscious and efficient cause, he is false.

Again, the Vedántins, as mentioned above, ultimately ascribe illusory-material causativity to the pure Brahma, whom they indeed count a true entity: only he is, avowedly, devoid of all that constitutes a conscious and efficient cause.

The reason why the Vedántins generally refer to the illusion-associated Brahma the illusory-material causativity of the world, is this. Brahma, it is laid down, possesses such causativity, in the sight of the ignorant only, by whom the world is reputed to be real. To such, the material cause of the world, or illusion, is likewise real; and, in like manner, Brahma is, to them, necessarily associated with illusion. Consequently, when Brahma the illusion-associated is spoken of as the illusory-material cause of the world, it is not intended, that he, as such, is such a cause, but solely as pure Brahma: and yet, to the ignorant, he is not, in fact, unassociated Brahma, but Brahma associated with illusion.
ing speech and thought; unalloyed intelligence, without rise or disappearance; lord—this entire universe was produced unconsciously.'¹ And how was the

¹ अपि च वैदिकवाज्जनसातिगानुदित्तित्वचिदंकरसात प्रभोः।
अभवदानकदत्रुभिन्ननदन्ददमतिपूर्विदं सकलं जगतं॥

No MS of the Sankshepa-sārīraka is just now accessible for reference.

By ‘son of Ānakadundubhi’ is meant Krishṇa.

The earlier Vedāntins, Śankara Āchārya and his proximate followers, were—as will be seen in a coming note—Vaishṇava, and held Vishnu, or Krishṇa, to be the Supreme Spirit himself. They use the word Vāsudeva, a name of Krishṇa, as a synonym of Brahma.

Thus, Śankara, commenting on the Katha-upanishad, says:

विष्णुपनशोलस्य ब्रह्म: परमात्मनो वासुदेवाक्षयस्य।

Bibliotheca Indica, Vol. VIII, p. 114. ‘Of “Vishṇu”, known as Vāsudeva,—pervader of all, Brahma, the Supreme Spirit.’

Vāsudeva, as a word, means ‘son of Vāsudeva’. The Vedāntins, however, try to force from it, etymologically, various senses available for epithets of Brahma. The author of the Sankshepa-sārīraka, one of the elder Vedāntin doctors, expresses and implies, throughout his book, that Vishṇu is the supreme Brahma of his own school. But Śiva, he says, is the Īśvara of the Vaiṣeshika and other anti-vaidika denominations:

मतिर्मतां प्रवरो वृषभभवः।
कणभुगादिमुनिव्रस्त्रप्रभु:॥

In the stanza at the beginning of this note, he puts ‘son of Ānakadundubhi’ for Vāsudeva, because the latter word was refractory to his prosody. Ānakadundubhi, otherwise called Vāsudeva, was father of Vāsudeva, that is to say, Krishṇa.

By the application of the term vaidika to Vāsudeva, it is intimated, that Krishṇa is the supreme Brahma of the Vedāntins.
world produced unconsciously from the son of Anakadundubhi? The answer is, precisely as silver is produced from nacre; not as an effect owes its origin to a conscious agent. Hence I maintain, that, if Brahma be not conscious creator of the world, or its stay, otherwise than as nacre is to silver, that is to say, in spite of himself, to establish that such a substrate exists is not to make out, that Brahma, as essentially existence, intelligence, and joy, is an entity. To prove, that any being is such a stay of the world as the Vedântins talk of, it must first of all be shown, that the world is illusory. And, though the world be so considered, how is it determined, that its stay, or substrate, which is mistaken for the world, a visible and material thing, is void of qualities, impassable, without form, immutable, essentially existence, intelligence, and joy, as the Vedântins describe Brahma?

Now, the Supreme Spirit, God, whom the Bible calls the Upholder of the world, is not so as nacre is to silver, or as the ground is to a jar, or as a thing qualified is to its qualities, or as its threads are to a web. He is called the world's Upholder, because by His wondrous and inscrutable will and might the world is supported. As it did not originate spontaneously, so neither is it self-sustaining, but is upheld by the constant exercise of the Divine Will. To speak figuratively, the hand of His will holds up its existence. Let that hand be withdrawn but for a single instant, and it would at once fall into non-existence. Such is

As, in the chapter here cited from, the Vedânta theory is set in opposition to the Vaiśeshika, etc., so is Krishna set in opposition to Śiva.
the exalted sense in which the Bible speaks of God as the Stay of the world; as where it says: 'In Him we live, and move, and have our being.' From other passages of Holy Writ, where God is mentioned as the Creator and Upholder of the world, it is evident what meaning we are to assign to the text just cited. How wide, then, is the difference between the Vedānta doctrine, on the point here discussed, and the doctrine of the Bible!

But, over and above all this, it should not be forgotten, that, in the estimation of the Vedāntins, the pure Brahma's being even the unconscious substrate of the universe is not true (paramarthika). For the ignorance by which he is imagined to be such a substrate, is itself maintained to be false! a position necessary for the integrity of monism. Strictly speaking, then, there is not even so much of a connexion between the pure Brahma and the universe as seemed, a minute ago, to be promised. This is strange absurdity; but I am not responsible for it. I take the Vedānta as I find it, and trace its principles to their issues.

And let no one suppose, that the places in the Upanishads and other Vedānta works, where an omniscient or omnipotent being, or the conscious and efficient cause of the world, is spoken of, are claimed, by the Vedāntins, as referring to their pure Brahma. On the contrary, they assert, that their Isvara is there meant. Names which they give to him are, Brahma with qualities, Brahma adulterate, illusion-associated

---

1 This will be shown in the eighth chapter.
Brahma, illusive Brahma,\(^1\) and even supreme Brahma and Supreme Spirit. For—as should be distinctly kept in mind—it is the supreme Brahma himself, imagined, by ignorance, as associated with illusion, as creating the world, and as endowed with the attributes of omniscience, etc., that is,Īśvara.

The case of the soul, and that of the world, are, however, precisely like that ofĪśvara; for the soul and the world are nothing but Brahma mistaken for them. Why, then, isĪśvara, in a more special and eminent sense than the soul and the world, considered to be one with Brahma? The Vedāntin would reply, this his system persuasively accommodates its language, when addressed to the vulgar, to their erroneous views. The vulgar are not conscious, that they call 'the Supreme Spirit himself soul and the world; but they are conscious, that they believe him to be the omnipotent and omniscient creator. But what I think to be the true reason is this: that, though the Vedāntin, in order to save monism, is forced upon the invention, that Brahma is void of qualities, yet his inner consciousness does not acquiesce in this position. Hence he is involuntarily led to speak of Brahma andĪśvara promiscuously, as if they were the same.

The first of the Vedānta Aphorisms, to be sure, professes to inquire about Brahma; and the second defines him to be author of the world's origin, subsistence, and end. Yet it must not be inferred, from this, that the Vedāntins really so conceive of their

\(^1\) See the first extract fromĀnanda Giri, cited at p. 220. 'Brahma adulterate' translates śabala-brahman.
pure Brahma. It is not, that the essential nature of the pure Brahma is there defined; but a false character is imputed to him, with intent to point out his true nature from afar.¹

¹ The Vedântins have two sorts of definitions of Brahma. The first, svarûpa-lakshana, describes his true nature, and is worded, 'existent, intelligence, and joy'. The other definition, that in question, is called tatâstha-lakshana. Tatâstha signifies 'standing on the shore'. True to the metaphor, such a definition denotes a characteristic which, though not in fact inhering in the thing defined, approximates to it, and indicates it. The ordinary illustration represents a man as pointing out the new moon to another, by directing him to look at a certain branch of a certain tree.

Râmânanda Sarasvatî, expounding the commentary on the second aphorism of the Brahma-sûtra, mentioned above, writes thus: ननु जिज्ञासयनिगुणब्रह्मम्: कारणालं कर्यं लक्षणमिति चेतुत्स्यते। यथा रजतं शुद्धरूपंक्षणं यद् रजतं सा शून्यतिति तथा यत् जगाकारणं तद् ब्रह्मति कल्पितकारणालं तद्भवं सदेव ब्रह्मणो लक्षणमियनवधम्। Bibliotheca Indica, No. 64, p. 38. 'But how can causativity be a characteristic of Brahma, destitute of qualities, the object of inquiry? If this be asked, the reply is: In like manner as silver is a characteristic of nacre, in the proposition "That which is mistaken for silver is nacre," so, in the proposition, "That which is mistaken for the cause of the world is Brahma," imaginary causativity is a merely suggestive characteristic of Brahma. Thus is all unimpeachable.'

Thus it is declared, that Brahma is held to be author of the world's origin, continuance, and end, just as nacre is nacreine silver.

The description of the tatâstha-lakshana given by the author of the Vedânta-paribhâṣâ, pp. 34–5, may appear, to a hurried
It may be asked, whether the Vedantins consider reader, to make against the above: तदस्यलक्षणं नाम याव- हृदयकालमनवस्थिताः सति यद् क्यावर्तकं तदेव। यथा गण्यवर्तं पुनःविलक्षणं महाप्रलये परमाणु उत्पत्तिकाले घटादिष्रु च गन्धाभावात्। प्रकृते च जगज्ञानादिकारणाः। ‘A suggestive characteristic is that which does not correspond temporally to the object characterized, and which yet distinguishes it from other things. Thus, the having odour is a suggestive characteristic of earth; for, at the great consummation, there is no odour in the terreine atoms; nor is there any in jars and the like, at the time of their production. And, in the case in hand, that is, of Brahma, the being the cause of the origin, etc., of the universe is the suggestive characteristic.’

It might be thought, from this, that, however, the causativity of the universe does not always appertain to Brahma, still it appertains to him at some particular period or periods; as odour, the earth. But the reader cannot be too often cautioned, that the expressions of the Vedántins are frequently most deceptive. What has just been stated is, suitably to the Vedánta, true as far as it goes, only it is not the whole truth. Brahma’s causativity of the world’s origin, etc., is, to be sure, non-eternal, even as the developed universe itself is non-eternal. Both the causativity and the universe are, however, not only non-eternal, but false. They are only ignorance-imagined; and, immediately on the acceding of right apprehension, they are falsified, or proved to be nothing. For this very reason they are called transitory: ताइशमधिकरणं यदि चैतन्यव्यतिरित्रिकं तदा तस्य नित्यलक्षितं द्रष्टव्यव्यतिरित्रितं सर्वसं ब्रह्मावन- निवर्त्यतया वक्ष्माणावत् । Ibid., p. 32. ‘If such substrate is other than intelligence, that is, Brahma, its eternalness is not established. For, as will be declared, all but Brahma is falsifiable by right apprehension of Brahma.’
The ensuing passage will clear up the meaning of Dharmarāja:

ननु बदन्तेव्रहणि जगाकरणचेन प्रतिपादमाने सति मपपष ब्रह्म स्थान अनवथा स्विष्ट्वाक्यानामप्रमाणप्राप्तिति चेल न। न हि स्विष्ट्वाक्यानां सुष्ठी तात्पर्ये कित्वर्थ्ये ब्रह्मण्येव। तत्प्रतिपत्तिः कथं सुष्ठे पयोः। इत्यम्। यदि सुष्ठिमनुनछ्यते प्राप्तस्य निषेधो ब्रह्मणि प्रतिपाद्यने तदा ब्रह्मणि प्रतिष्ठितस्य प्राप्तस्य बायौ प्रतिष्ठितस्यः प्राप्ते ब्रह्मणोवस्त्रवस्तानां ने निर्विचिकित्समद्वितीयलं प्रतिपाद्यति स्थान। तत: सुष्ठिवा-

क्याद् ब्रह्मोपदेहवहने सति उपादानं विना कायस्यान्यतः चुनावशिश्वाय निरस्तायां नेति नेतीयादिना ब्रह्मण्यित तस्याः क्षरोपपदने प्राप्तस्य तुच्छाकारमेव निरस्तारिखस्थितिविच मम्मकं सि-दादान्देकर्सं ब्रह्म सिध्यतीति परमप्रथ सुष्ठि-

वाक्यानामप्राप्तितियः ब्रह्मण्येव तात्पर्यम्। उपासनाप्रकरणपतिः-

समुग्गुणवाक्यानां उपासनाविभेष्यप्रकाशितजगारोपपालमिति न समुग्गुणपर्यम्। निग्रुणप्रकरणपतितां समुग्गुणवाक्यानां तु निषेधान्वाक्यप्रकाशितनिश्चेतयस्मर्पकलेन विनियोग इति न किथारिथि बाक्यमद्वितीयान्ब्रह्मप्रतिपादनेन निष्ठायते। Ibid., pp. 40-1.

"If Brahma is set forth, by the Vedāntas, that is, the Upanishads, to be the cause of the world, he must be in relation with the world; and the consequence is duality. Else, the scriptural declarations of creation come to be falsified." Not so. The passages which speak of creation do not aim to teach the verity of creation, but to impart a knowledge of the soundless Brahma. How is the description of creation subservient to the knowledge
of him? In this wise. If the existence of the universe in Brahma were denied, and creation were not mentioned, the surmise might arise, that the universe, denied to exist in Brahma, exists somewhere else, even as colour, though denied to exist in the air, exists in other things; and thus an indubitable account of non-duality would not have been given. Hence, when it is ascertained, from the passages concerned with creation, that the universe is a material effect, viz., an illusory-material effect, of Brahma, the surmise, that the universe, the material effect, could exist elsewhere than in Brahma, the material cause, is dispelled. Then, by the statement, in "Not it, not it," and other scriptural passages, of the non-existence of it, the universe, in Brahma also, the utter nihility of the universe being ascertained, Brahma—freed from all suspicion of duality; impartial; the existent, intelligence, and joy, unalloyed with ought else—is established. Thus, the aim of even the passages relating to creation is, to set forth, indirectly, Brahma as without a second. The object of the passages read in the devotional sections of the Upanishads, which announce Brahma with qualities, is, simply to impute qualities falsely to Brahma, which qualities are demanded by the injunctions to devotion; and their object is not to teach that he is possessed of qualities. As for the use of the passages read in sections of the Upanishads taken up with Brahma without qualities, which passages speak of him as having qualities, it is, to indicate, supplementarily, the object denied, viz., qualities which object is demanded by the passages denying qualities, to Brahma. Thus no passage whatever is inconsistent with the declaration of Brahma as secondless.

The Vedântins, accordingly, discourse of Brahma's causativity, and other qualities, simply with intent to confirm the idea of their entire nonentity.

It will be sufficiently clear, from what precedes, how essentially Dr. J. R. Ballantyne has misapprehended the purport of the Vedânta system. 'So far,' he says, 'is the conception of Brahma from being reduced to that of a nonentity by the Vedântic tenet of his being nirguna, that, according to one of Vyâsa's aphorisms, as rendered by Mr. Colebrooke (Essays, p. 352), "Every attribute of a first cause (omniscience, omnipotence, etc.), exists in Brahme, who is devoid of qualities." It is
their Íśvara to be altogether false. They regard illusion-appropriated Brahma as Íśvara. A part of him may be false; but how can that other part of him, which is Brahma, be so? In reply, I ask, whether they do not maintain, that Brahma as appropriated to the internal organ constitutes the soul? And why do they call the soul false? The reason is this. They assert, that Brahma, as appropriated to the internal organ, or else as reflected in it, constitutes the soul; and yet they deny, that Brahma is truly so appropriated, or reflected; there being, according to them, no true contact between Brahma and the internal organ, but only an erroneously imputed contact; since, like the rest of the world, the internal organ is false. Hence, though the soul is called Brahma appropriated to the internal organ, still, since his appropriation to the internal organ is false, the soul as soul is false. Similarly, though they call Brahma appropriated to illusion Íśvara, they declare, that the contact of illusion with Brahma is not true, but merely imagined. Hence, with them, Íśvara is Brahma appropriated to illusion; and yet they believe their Íśvara’s appropriation to illusion to be imaginary; and, therefore, their Íśvara is imaginary, namely, imagined by ignorance. According to their opinion, even the false Íśvarahood of this

rather strange, that the occurrence of this passage in Mr. Colebrooke’s well-known essay should not have sufficed to awaken a suspicion, that the term “devoid of qualities” must be employed in a sense other than that of an empty substratum—a nonentity.’—Christianity contrasted, etc., p. 46.

1 सायावच्छन्तं चैतन्यं च परमेश्वर्: | Vedaṅga-paribhāṣā, p. 9. ‘Intelligence appropriated to illusion is Íśvara, supreme.’
illusion-appropriated Īśvara belongs to his illusion-portion, not to his Brahma-portion; in like manner as the false activity, experience of happiness and misery, and other qualities of the imagined internal-organ-appropriated soul, reside in its internal-organ-portion, not in its Brahma-portion. When, therefore, they call Īśvara maker of the world and omnipotent, it must be understood, that they deny activity and other qualities to his Brahma-portion.

Sometimes the Vedāntins give to illusion the appellation of power of Īśvara. Still, it does not inhere in the true nature of Īśvara, his Brahma-portion, in the way we hold, that power inhere in one who is powerful. For we regard this connexion as true; but the connexion between Brahma and illusion is false. It is distinctly stated, in the Vedānta-sāra, that, as a snake is erroneously surmised in a cord, just so the entire universe, beginning with ignorance, is erroneously surmised in Brahma.\textsuperscript{1} Here, it should be observed, ignorance itself is comprehended in the universe, the object of erroneous surmise. By ignorance, as will be seen by the reader of the Vedānta-sāra, illusion—which is the material cause of the world, often denominated the power of Īśvara—is here intended.

Not except by apprehending these mysterious matters of the Vedānta, can one be preserved from being misled.

\textsuperscript{1} असर्पभूताय रज्जौ सपरिरोपत वस्तुन्यक्षस्वारोपोध्यारोपः।
वस्तु सविदानन्दायं ब्रह्म। अञ्जानादिसकल्लज्जसमूहोऽवस्तु।
p. 4.
by its language. To make good this assertion, I produce a passage on the subject of ignorance-associated intelligence, or Ḣīvra. It is this: 'Intelligence, associated with ignorance, when the former is chiefly considered, is the efficient cause; and, when its associate is so considered, the material cause: as the spider, when itself is chiefly considered, is the efficient cause, and, when its body, whence its web is derived, is so considered, the material cause, as regards its thread, the effect.' On reading this, one of the uninitiated will express himself in this wise. 'Here, plainly enough, two statements are put forth touching Ḣīvra. His body—ignorance, or illusion—is called the material cause of the world; and himself, the efficient cause of the world, or its maker. And what is he, in distinction from ignorance, his body, but pure Brahma? And does it not follow, that this pure Brahma is accounted maker of the world?' I reply, that no one who has fathomed the Vedānta doctrine can come to such a conclusion as is thus implied. By way of explanation, I will first show how, according to the Vedāntin, the case stands, in its fulness, as regards the spider; and then, how the illustration of the spider and his web is applicable, according

1 अशापिशित्वेतन्यं स्याग्नातत्या निमित्तं खापाधिप्रधान-
तयोपाद्यं च भवति। यथा त्वत्तवात्तुकायं प्रतिस्याग्नातत्या
निमित्तं खशरोग्याग्नायन्योपाद्यं च भवति। Vedānta-sāra, p. 7.

Iśvara is sometimes called māyāvachchhinna, and, sometimes, ajñānopahita: or 'illusion-appropriated' and 'ignorance associated.'
to the Vedāntin, in respect of Īśvara. It must be understood, that, in the view of the Vedāntin as the human soul is, in fact, ever pure, intelligent, and free Brahma, precisely, so is the self, or soul, of the spider. Hence, as activity and other qualities belong to the human soul only by erroneous imputation, only thus do they belong to the soul of the spider: there being no true connexion between those qualities and soul; for those qualities are properties of the internal organ. How, then, are we to explain, that the spider, i.e. the spider's soul, is called an efficient cause? The answer is, that its causativity is accounted for by erroneous imputation. Then, an objector may urge, the efficient causativity and material causativity of the spider both appertain to its body: for the internal organ is called the subtile body, and it must, therefore, be

¹ṣीतस्येव जरस्यीपाधिकोण्याश्रयलवत् समावतो निर्गुणस्येव जिवस्यान्तःकर्णायपाधिविशात् कर्त्तवायश्रयलप्रतिभा-सोपपत्ते: । यदि जलाद्वीप्यमारोपितं तदा प्रक्वतेश्विन तल्ल्यू॥

Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 45. 'For, as water assuredly cold in its proper nature, is erroneously taken to be the subject of heat which appears, in consequence of the water's proximity to its associate, fire, to inhere in the water; so, it may be explained, the soul, by essence truly void of qualities, is wrongly supposed, by reason of its being taken to be identical with the internal organ and others of its associates, the true subjects of activity, etc., to be the subject of activity and the like. If it is admitted, that the heat in water and other cold substances is falsely ascribed, i.e. misapprehendingly referred to them, then be it known, that similar wrongness of ascription has place as regards what is in discussion, viz., the soul.'
regarded as body; and, this being the case, why is a distinction taken between the spider and its body, and the former called efficient cause, and the latter, material cause? My reply is that, in the passage of the Vedānta-sūtra under discussion, the exoteric notion is adopted. For, when the Vedāntins speak of the origin of the world, for instance, they do not believe its origin to be true. This mode of expression they call false imputation. It consists in holding for true that which is false, in accommodation to the intelligence of the uninitiated. At a further stage of instruction, when the time has arrived for propounding the esoteric view, the false imputation is gainsaid: and this gainsaying is termed rescission.¹ The soul of the spider has no true efficient causativity; and yet everybody considers the spider as possessing it. Hence, with reference to common opinion, such causativity is falsely imputed to him, and he is called an efficient cause. The qualities of his external and gross corporeal frame are, however, never attributed to his soul: his body being regarded, by all, as distinct from his soul.² Hence, when the author of the

¹ 'False imputation' and 'rescission' have been selected to represent adhītyāropa and apavāda.

² As for the Chārvākas, and the profoundly ignorant, who take the gross body itself to be the soul, they are scarcely worthy of the notice of the Vedāntin, who especially shapes his instruction to meet the supposed wants of the Nyāyānikas and similar philosophers. These, the Vedāntin says, though wise enough to distinguish the soul from the gross body, are, nevertheless, unable to distinguish it from the internal organ, and attribute to the soul the qualities which belong exclusively to that organ, viz., apprehension, will, activity, etc. See, further, what Vījnāna Bhikshu says in the last extract at p. 73.
Vedānta-sāra treats the body of the spider as a thing distinct from his soul, and calls the former the material cause of his web, he goes along with other men. All that has here been said about the spider is applied, by the Vedāntins, to their Īśvara.

The Naiyāyikas, and many others, hold Īśvara, regarded, by them, as mere spirit, to be the maker of the world. But these poor men, as a Vedāntin would say, are unaware of the esoteric fact, that, in truth, the maker of the world is not his spirit—that is, his Brahma-portion, to which Īśvarahood is falsely imputed—but his associate, which is his subtile body, or internal organ.¹ On this point, the Vedāntins,

¹ For, with the Vedāntins, Īśvara, no less than the soul, requires a sort of subtile body, or internal organ. It is called his causal body. Neither can do anything without one. The aggregate of the causal bodies of all souls, that is to say, distributive ignorances, make up Īśvara's causal body, which is illusion. See the Vedānta-sāra. Strange to say, the ignorance of a single soul renders that soul subject to misapprehension, and keeps it parviscient, parvipotent, etc.; but the aggregation of these individual ignorances, or illusion, allows Īśvara to be exempt from misapprehension, and communicates to him such attributes as omniscience and omnipotence.

In the furthest distance of chamber sate an old dim-eyed man, poring with a microscope over the torso of a statue, which had neither base, nor feet, nor head; but on its breast was carved, Nature To this he continually applied his glass, and seemed enraptured with the various inequalities which it rendered visible on the seemingly polished surface of the marble. Yet evermore was this delight and triumph followed by expressions of hatred, and vehement railing against a being who yet, he assured us, had no existence. This mystery suddenly recalled to me what I had read in the holiest recess of the temple of Superstition. The old man spoke in divers tongues, and continued to utter other and most strange
condescending to avail themselves of the language of the, to them, parcel-blind Naiyāyikas, and many others, falsely impute efficient causativitv to Īśvāra, and denominate him efficient cause. But none of these shortsighted folk take Īśvāra to be the material cause of the world. This cause some of them find in atoms; others, in something else material. What, then, would the Vedāntins offer as a material cause? Nay, as the very world is, to them, nothing, what need of a material cause at all? Nevertheless, seeing what the vulgar way of thinking is, one must be enunciated; and they find it in ignorance, or illusion, which invents the world. Let the Naiyāyikas take this, in place of their atoms, and the Sāṅkhyas, instead of their prakṛti and so gratify their insensate craving. One may be perfectly sure, that, when the Vedāntins speak as I have represented, they express themselves, by way of 'false imputation', to bring themselves down to the level of common minds. In truth, agreeably to their views, Brahma has neither creatorship, nor omniscience, nor omnipotence; and, for this reason, he is not, in truth, Īśvāra.

mysteries. Among the rest he talked much and vehemently concerning an infinite series of causes and effects, which he explained to be—a string of blind men, the last of whom caught hold of the skirt of the one before him, he of the next, and so on till they were all out of sight; and that they all walked infallibly straight, without making one false step, though all were alike blind. Methought I borrowed courage from surprise, and asked him, "Who, then, is at the head to guide them?" He looked at me with ineffable contempt, not unmixed with an angry suspicion, and then replied, "No one; the string of blind men goes on for ever without any beginning: for, although one blind man cannot move without stumbling, yet infinite
It may be asked, whether the Vedāntins really consider Īśvara to be nothing; whether the long accounts of him, which are found in the Upanishads and other books, are all to no purpose; and whether his characteristics, and those of the soul—as that he is omniscient, and the soul is parviscient—which are laid down, and the laboured discussions about these matters, are merely vain prattle. The Vedāntins, I reply, declare, that equally are the world and Īśvara simply practical, that is, imagined by ignorance, and false; and the long accounts just now spoken of are only statements of the suppositions of the uninitiated, propounded by way of false assumption. This they declare; and there is no doubt, that in congruity with their doctrines, they are obliged so to declare. Still, they have not the assent, to it, of their innermost convictions. In their hearts, they have an unshaken confidence, that there is an Īśvara, omnipotent, omniscient, omnipresent, and maker of the world. But it has been shown, that, strangely enough, they ascribe a real existence to those things even which they call false, to wit, the practical and the apparent. They look upon Īśvara as practical; and, therefore, their inward belief in his existence does not surprise them; nor do they find any difficulty in reconciling this belief with their capital dogma, that nothing but the secondless Brahma is true.¹

blindness supplies the want of sight."—COLETIDGE'S Lay Sermons, pp. 149-50.

¹ This passage bears upon more than one Hindu philosopheme. The Italics are not Coleridge's.
these, to the best of their knowledge, worship with earnest faith, sincerity, and love. Of the true God, and of His attributes, which Holy Writ alone can teach, they are ignorant; but their devotion is fervent to Rāma, Kṛishṇa, and others, whom their books represent as God. Sarvajñātma Muni, author of the Sankshepa-sārīraka, and Madhusūdana Sarasvatī, author of the Advaita-siddhi—to take examples from among renowned Vedānta doctors—were ardent devotees of Viṣṇu. And there are, to this day, among the Vedāntins, thousands of men equally religious.

In passing, the error may be noted—so generally prevalent, nowadays, both here and abroad; see Professor Wilson’s translation of the Viṣṇu-purāṇa, Preface, p. x—of supposing, that Śankara Āchārya, the celebrated Vedāntin, was a follower of Śiva. Of this opinion are many of his own adherents, the Gosāns in particular. But it appears otherwise from books undoubtedly of his composition, such as the Sūtra-bhāṣya, etc.; in which Viṣṇu is, again and again, especially, and all but exclusively, magnified. Another argument may be drawn from the fact, that he enjoined upon his disciples to salute each other with names of Viṣṇu. Of two dāndins, a younger and an elder, the first uses ‘Hariḥ’, and the other replies ‘Nārāyaṇa’. On these grounds, the author is strongly disposed to believe, that Śankara was a Vaishnava.

See, likewise, the notes at p. 141 and p. 199. Śankara, where he writes against the Pāñcupatas, a famous sect of Śaivas, is silent on the subject of their devotion; but, on coming to refute the peculiar tenets of the Bhāgavatas, he dwells with unction and admiration on their religious exercises and service.
CHAPTER IV

Proof that the Existence of Brahma cannot be deduced from the Position of the Vedāṇṭa, that the Internal Organ requires an Illuminator.

I have asserted, in the last chapter, that the Vedāṇṭins' Brahma without qualities is not to be established, by any argument, as existing, he having no connexion with anything, either as efficient cause, or otherwise. To this the Vedāṇṭins may reply, that there is an argument for their purpose, as yet unproduced. It is, that the mental affection, 'This is a jar', or 'This is a web', for example, stands in need of an illuminator: for the internal organ is unintelligent; and, therefore, its affections cannot cognize a jar, a web, or similar object. Hence, something is indispensable, by whose contiguity the unintelligent internal organ is to be illuminated: and that something is the intelligent spirit, or Brahma.¹ In reply, I ask, whether, in maintaining, that Brahma, or spirit, is intelligent and illuminating, it is meant, that he himself, through the

¹ Spirit, universally, is held to be one with Brahma. The soul (jīvātman) of anything, or body, is a synthesis of spirit (Ātman) and internal organ. This organ abstracted, the residuum is, in all cases, pure Brahma. Compare the notes at pp. 4-5.
medium of the internal organ, cognizes such an object as a jar, or a web; in other words, does he apprehend, that 'This is a jar', 'This is a web', etc.? And, when the internal organ is called the cognizer of a jar, or the like, is it intended to call it so only metonymically? For I too talk, by way of metonymy, of the eye as cognizing colour, and of the ear as cognizing sound; I really understanding, however, that the eye and the ear are not themselves cognizers, but merely media of cognition. What is said about Brahma is not to be interpreted in like manner; since, by such an interpretation, the Vedāntin would not prove the existence of his Brahma—ever pure, intelligent, and free, unchangeable, essentially existence, intelligence, and joy—but the existence of souls, impure, ignorant, and wretched. The Vedāntins do not hold, that the pure spirit, Brahma, really cognizes objects; that is to say, they do not allege, that the pure spirit cognizes objects in this manner—'This is a jar', 'This is a web', etc.\(^1\) For, if they allowed this sort of cognition to him, they would have to allow to him will,

The tenet stated in the text is thus expressed in Śankara Achārya's Commentary on the Kena-ūpanishad: न ह्यन्त:-करणप्रतिरूप चेतन्यश्योलिष्ठा दीपितं स्विशेषसृष्टिप्राध्यवस्य-दिसमयं स्यात। *Bibliotheca Indica*, Vol. VIII, pp. 36-7.

'For the internal organ, unless illuminated by the light of intelligence, would be incapable of willing and apprehending its object.'

\(^1\) Proofs of all the statements in the present chapter will be found in the chapter following.
activity, happiness, misery, and so forth; and, as a consequence, he would be a doer of good and of evil works, and an heir of Elysium, or of Hell, and a partaker of threefold pain. And all this is at variance with the Vedānta economy, which asserts, that spirit is Brahma, neither doer, nor experiencer, neither sinful, nor virtuous, etc. Since, then, you deny, that the pure spirit, Brahma, really cognizes things—and yet they are cognized, and there is a cognizer—what does so cognize them? It is the internal organ, after all. And, whatever it is that cognizes objects,—as 'This is a jar', 'This is a web'—whether you call it internal organ, or anything else—what necessity has it of an illuminator? ¹ Nobody feels that it has

¹ Of course we owe to the Deity our original and continued possession of the faculty of apprehension. But, since we are endowed with this faculty, we need, in order to our apprehending objects, nothing further than the use of our senses and other appointed means. Different, however, is the notion of the Vedāntin; which is, that it is our internal organs, not our real selves, that are concerned in apprehension. The assertion, that Brahma, or spirit, is required to illuminate the internal organ, does not signify that we stand in need of God's help to aid us to apprehend. It is not meant, that Brahma, by a voluntary exercise of his power, illuminates that organ; for Brahma has no such power. The idea intended is, that the internal organ, simply by reason of its proximity to Brahma, who is unconscious, becomes illuminated; just as iron moves, when brought near the magnet. In fact, Brahma's influence, of whatever description, in the production of effects, is exerted in this way only.
any. In the kinds of cognition known as perception, inference, etc., there is need, respectively, of a sense,

अत आत्मनि कर्त्तवमकर्तव्यं च संस्थितम्

‘As the iron moves, when the precious stone, void of will, is opposed to it; precisely so the aggregate of worlds is moved, without exercise of volition, by Deva, sheer existence. Hence there exists, in spirit, agentship and non-agentship. As having no will, it is not an agent: and it is an agent because of mere proximity.’

These verses are from the Yoga-vāsishṭha. See the Calcutta edition of 1851, p. 390. A bad reading, यथास्थःलोकः has been discarded on authority. Vijnāna Bhikshu cites these lines in the Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, p. 71. सत्त्विधिमात्रेणाविष्टः तूऽऽत कर्तवमदासीनलं चार्विष्क्रमिति मातः। Śrīdhara Swāmin’s Subodhini, Bombay edition, fol. 45, verso. ‘Since Brahma is superintendent solely by virtue of juxtaposition, his being an agent and his being neutral as to agency do not conflict.’

On this point the Sāṅkhyaśas and the Vedāntins are quite at unity. Witness Vijnāna Bhikshu: अस्मान्तिस्य पुष्पस्य सत्त्वार्णादेवविष्णुतलं स्नान्तादेवचिन्ह्यं भवति। यथायस्थकान्तमणोऽसत्त्विधिमात्रेण शल्यनिर्भरकर्तव्यं न सदृश्यादित्वादेव पुष्पस्य संयोगमात्रेण प्रकृतमेवहस्त्वश्च परिणतमः। Sāṅkhya-pravachana-bhāṣya, pp. 70-1. ‘We hold, that the soul’s ‘superintendentship’, in creatorship, etc., is ‘from nearness’ alone; ‘after the manner of the precious stone’. As this, the magnet, merely from nearness, and not by will, etc., draws out an iron pin; so, by simple contact of the primal soul,
of perception of invariable attendedness,\textsuperscript{1} etc., but there is no need of any aid other than one of these; nor are we conscious of any such. The Vedāntins, however, contend, that another is indispensably desiderated; the cognizer of objects, the internal organ, being unintelligent, and so devoid of inherent power of cognition. Hence, they go on to say, that power is derived to it by the contiguity of the intelligent spirit, from which contiguity it becomes quasi-intelligent; just as iron moves, when brought near the loadstone. Spirit, or Brahma, as being that from contiguity of which the unintelligent becomes quasi-intelligent—and solely on this account—is affirmed to be intelligence and illuminating. 'Similarly,' the Vedāntins would add, 'it is declared, respecting their \textit{purusha}, or "soul", by our younger brothers the Sāṅkhyaś; and they are incomparably more perspicacious than you Christians, and the Naiyāyikas, and other thinkers of

\textit{Hiranyagarbha, there takes place an evolution of nature, in the shape of the great principle.}'

A little further on it is explicitly stated, that the superintendency of soul is only nominal; true superintendency belonging exclusively to the internal organ.

Referring to the illumination of the internal organ, \textit{Vijnāna} says, that the intellect becomes intelligent from the contiguity of soul: \textit{बुद्धेश्व या चित्ता सा पुरुषसत्रिविज्ञात।} \textit{Ibid., p. 109.}

In opposition to the view in question, it is assumed, and will soon be proved, that it is one's self that apprehends, and that the illuminator desiderated by the Vedāntins is superfluous.

\textsuperscript{1} These are the instruments of right notion recognized in the \textit{Nyāya}. The tenets and phraseology of that school of philosophy, so far as they are reasonable, are adopted, throughout this volume, in opposing the Sāṅkhya and the Vedānta.
the cruder sort.’ To this I reply, ‘Good sirs, not till I accept the truth of your concatenation of groundless theories, can I grant that your illuminator is wanted. To be brought to your way of thinking, I must be convinced, first, that it is the internal organ which cognizes things, secondly, that a cognizer can be unintelligent; thirdly, that an unintelligent cognizer could be made quasi-intelligent by the mere juxtaposition of something else; and, lastly, that, becoming only as it were intelligent, and not positively so, it could do that which is competent to none but one

1 The notions now under comment are equally those of the Vedántins and of the Sánkhyas. No passage, bearing on the point of doctrine implied in the words to which this note is appended, is at this moment producible from any Vedánta treatise. The following is from Vijnāna Bhikṣu: नन्विविष्णातिवं घटादिवदचेतनस्य न युक्तं ततासह। लोहवत् तदुज्ज्वलितं तत्वादिति। अन्तःकरणं हि तस्महत्वं चेतनोज्ब्ज्बलितं भवति। अतस्तस्य चेतनायमानत्याविष्णातिवं घटादिवाद्वृत्तमूलपदात इत्यः। अ.प्र.भ.भ. प. 72. ‘‘It is not reasonable to assert, that this internal organ, which is unintelligent, like a jar, or similar thing, can be a superintendent.’ With reference to this objection, it is said, ‘Because the internal organ is illuminated by that, viz., soul, as iron is heated to redness by fire.’’ The internal organ becomes illuminated by the intelligent one, after the manner of heated iron. Therefore, since it becomes as it were intelligent, it can exercise superintendence, which a jar, or the like, cannot. Such is the sense.’

The ninety-ninth Aphorism of Book I is thus in part expounded.
really intelligent. And all these notions are assumptions resting upon no proof. I ask you, why you call the cognizer of objects unintelligent? Why not intelligent? 'What!' you reply, 'can the internal organ be intelligent? No; only the spirit can.' Again I ask, why you call the cognizer internal organ? Why not call it spirit? To this you will say, that, if you did, you must yield the point, that spirit is, in its nature, ever pure and free. It comes, then, to this, that, in order to make good a favourite fancy, you are willing to contradict universal experience, and to transgress the limits of reason for the sake of mere dreams. These things I have dealt with in my examination of the Sāṅkhya; and so it is unnecessary to go into detail about them here. Still, if you will allow me, I will add a few words. What do you mean by spirit? Is it a thing different from yourself and myself? Or is it the same? You will reply, 'How can we consider spirit to be anything different from ourselves? For the spirit is my true proper essence, and yours; and therefore it is called self.' I rejoin, that, if you consider yourself and myself to be spirit, and, again, the cognizer of objects to be unintelligent, it follows, that you take spirit to be unintelligent; you and I being cognizers of objects. For, in canvassing the Sāṅkhya, I have shown, that our consciousness, that we cognize objects, and that we will, etc., cannot be erroneous. Consequently, if the cognizer be unintelligent, you and I are so: and, if we are so, spirit likewise is so; since we, as you have said, are spirit. The reason why you err here is, that, to establish a favourite fancy, you call that unintelli-
gent which really is intelligent; and, when you have
made the intelligent unintelligent, you cast about for
something else to hold for intelligent, to serve as
illuminator of the unintelligent. For what are the
characteristics of the intelligent but the qualities of
cognizing, willing, and the like? To denote such
qualities is the express purpose of the word intelligent.
Whatever is competent to cognize or apprehend objects
can require nothing more to be intelligent. Call it
internal organ, or unintelligent, or thick darkness, or
how you like; the thing is not altered by altering its
name. Your own natural reason, too, tells you, that,
to be able to cognize is to be intelligent. Listen how
completely you and the Sāṇkhyaś mistake on this
point. You say, that the internal organ, being unin-
telligent, cannot cognize of itself. From this it is
evident, that you hold the cognizing of objects to be
the office of what is intelligent. If you acknowledge
this, and also, that the internal organ cognizes, why
do you call that organ unintelligent? Is it because
you have given it the name of internal organ? How
unreasonable a thing to do! You are aware, that
cognizing is the function of what is intelligent; and
you are, further, aware, that the internal organ
cognizes. Still you gratuitously declare it to be
unintelligent; and then you fabricate an illuminator to
render it intelligent. But does that illuminator make
it positively intelligent? No; only quasi-intelligent.
At first it was not intelligent; and, for that reason,
all was at a stand: but now, merely from its having
been made as it were intelligent, it becomes operative.
Just reflect, however. If a thing, not once only, but
a thousand times, were made only quasi-intelligent, not positively intelligent, it would still be other than intelligent; and whatever is so is unintelligent; and nothing that is unintelligent can do the office of the intelligent. But why waste time in such discussion? In brief, I express it as my view, that the cognizer of objects, namely, that which apprehends, wills, and energizes, is one's self; as yourself, or myself. Name this self-internal organ, or unintelligent, or whatever you choose, I shall not be alarmed; nor shall I go in search of an illuminator for it. The faculties of apprehending, etc., we are convinced, were given by God, Creator of the world and Almighty. And, since He has endowed us with them, and since we know, intuitively, that He has appointed the senses, the cognition of constant attendedness, and so on, to be our helpers, why should we take up with a fond invention?
CHAPTER V

Argument to show, that the Brahma of the Vedāntins, as being quite Void of Qualities, is reduced to nothing.

I have said, that the Vedāntin's Brahma has no qualities: in other words, he does not possess the faculties of apprehending, willing, etc.¹ Now, it is impossible to imagine the existence of anything without qualities. To our understandings, whatever is

¹ See the passage from the Vedānta-paribhāṣā, quoted at p. 245. Dharmarāja, who is there writing against the Naiyāyikas, denies the possession of qualities, as by them understood,—namely, apprehension, will, activity, etc.,—to Brahma. A substance, says that author, is, with the Naiyāyikas, the substrate of qualities; and Brahma, as being nirguṇa, or 'not possessed of qualities,' is not a substance.

Indeed, the element guṇa, in the word nirguṇa, is generally to be taken as denoting what the Naiyāyikas mean by qualities. See, further, the extract from the Vedānta-paribhāṣā, at p. 286.

But, even when nirguṇa points to the three guṇas, termed sattva, rajas, and tamas, it is not to be supposed, that the twenty-four qualities of the Naiyāyikas—adopted, almost all of them, by the Vedāntins—are excepted. Among those qualities, one set, comprehending colour, taste, etc., belongs to external objects; while apprehension, will, activity, etc., pertain to the internal organ; and some, as number, dimension,
such is nothing. The Vedāntins, however, though maintaining that Brahma has no qualities, deny that he is nothing; for, say they, on the score of excellence, he is surpassingly superior to all else that is; he being essentially existent—or, rather, as they explain the word, existence—intelligence, and joy. My reply to this is, that the presence of what etc., are predicable of both. But external objects and the internal organ are alike evolutions from goodness, passion, and darkness, the components of illusion, and the material cause of all but spirit. Dispossess Brahma of the three guṇas just enumerated, and he is dispossessed of consciousness and all similar attributes—in short, of everything conceivable.

Dr. J. R. Ballantyne has written as follows: ‘The Vedāntists are sometimes charged with holding, that the phenomenal is the real—in other words, with material Pantheism. At the same time, they are charged with the wildest extravagance, of an opposite description, in declaring, that the Supreme is devoid of qualities, or, in Sanskrit, nirguṇa. With regard to the relation of the real and the phenomenal, no point appears to have occasioned more perplexity to the European assailants of Vedāntism than the employment of this term nirguṇa, so frequently connected, in the Vedāntic writings, with the name of the Supreme (Brahm). We find, for example, a zealous writer against Vedāntism declaring, that, “In any sense within the reach of human understanding, he (Brahm) is nothing. For the mind of man can form no notion of matter or spirit apart from its properties or attributes.” And the same writer calls upon his readers to admire the extravagant notion, that Brahmx exists “without intellect, without intelligence, without even the consciousness of his own existence!” Now, the reply to all this is, that the word nirguṇa is a technical term, and must be understood in its technical acceptation. It means “devoid of whatever is meant by the term guṇa;” and the term guṇa is employed . . . to denote whatever is phenomenal. In denying that anything phenomenal belongs constitutively to the Supreme Being, the Vedāntin speaks very much like
are called qualities is an indispensable condition of existing. As for those who, differing from the mass of mankind, refuse to take a distinction between corporate qualities and that of which they are predicated, and hold them to be identical, I have no dispute with them. This is a most difficult matter, besides that I am not here called upon to contest it. Qualities—whichever of the two views just intimated is held concerning them—must, at all events, be maintained. Otherwise, nothing can be proved to exist.

Bishop Berkeley, and like other good Christians whom Milton’s epic has not educated into a semi-conscious anthropomorphism. . . . In short, the Vedāntin denies, that the Supreme either has or requires either senses or bodily organs; and, holding that organs of sense or motion are made up of what he calls guṇa—as we Europeans in general say they are made up of what we prefer to call matter—he asserts, that the Supreme is nirguṇa, in very much the sense that we Europeans assert, that God is immaterial. We say, guardedly, “in very much the sense,” and not simply “in the sense”; because the term guṇa denotes, strictly, not the imperceptible quiddity “matter”, but what Berkeley calls the sensible, or the sum of the objects of sense. Theologically, the Vedāntin, asserting that the Deity is nirguṇa, and the Christian, asserting that God is immaterial, are asserting the very same fact in terms of separate theories; just as two chemists might make each the same assertion in regard to some individual specimen, while the one spoke of it as destitute of chlorine, and the other spoke of it as destitute of oxymuriatic acid.’—Christianity contrasted, etc., pp. 48-5.

Besides that a most sublime conception of the Deity is groundlessly attributed to the Vedāntins, in the passage just extracted, two totally different ideas are there confounded; that of immateriality, and that of not possessing senses and bodily organs. It is first implied, that the Vedāntin, by the word nirguṇa, denies to his Supreme all senses and bodily organs; and then it is asserted, that nirguṇa denotes what we mean by immaterial; for that the Vedāntin, like Berkeley,
Brahma, the Vedāntins allege, is essentially existence, intelligence, and joy; and, if his nature as intelligence deserved to be called so, and, similarly, his nature as joy, I should not say, as I do, that he is nothing. But, even, if his intelligence and joy were so described, by the Vedāntins, as to deserve to be called such, still it would be impossible to establish his existence; for he is neither the efficient nor the material cause of the world; and hence he is out of relation with the world, and how, then, can we arrive, by inference, at a conviction of his existence? I will
does not believe in the ‘imperceptible quiddity, matter’. Now, supposing this assertion, which is not true, to be true, still the subtle tenet of repudiating matter can in nowise be suggested by the term nirguna, if used of Brahma, to express, for one thing—as it has been inferred to do—that he is destitute of senses and bodily organs. The word guṇa is sometimes applied indeed to the senses and bodily organs, but never to signify ‘the sensible’, or quality involved in the ordinary nirguna. One of its several meanings is that of appliance, or instrument; and it is in this acceptation that it denotes the senses and bodily organs. See Vijnāna Bhikshu’s explanation of guṇa, in the last extract from the Sāṅkhya-pravacana-bhāshya, given at p. 60. The following words, from another work of the same author, plainly indicate, that the term guṇa is applied to the organs of sense, etc., solely to mark them as instruments: सत्तवादित्यं ** द्रव्यवेदः एव पुष्पोपकरणात् पुष्पबन्धकलाच् च गुणशब्दनोत्तमते इन्द्रियादिवत् | Sāṅkhya-sāra, MS fol. 7, verso, ‘The triad consisting of goodness, etc., though substantial, and not qualities, is called, like the organs of sense, by the appellation of guṇa, as being, like them, ministrant to the soul, and from binding the soul, even as they do’.
show, however, that the hypothetical Brahma of the Vedāntins, as they describe him, comes out to be a nonentity. They declare, that he is constitutively cognition, and yet cognizes nothing; for, according to the Vedānta, the cognizing anything, or cognition relative to an object, is an affection of the internal organ;¹ and Brahma's constitutive cognition is not such.² An object abstracted, cognition is impracticable: for how can there be cognition where there is

¹न स्त्रद्रपमूताप्रज्ञा वस्तुतो वाशविषयेषयते बुद्धिवृत्तिस्प्या—
वस्तुविज्ञानलिपिता तद्भिषयां भवति। Ananda Giri on Śāṅkara

Āchārya’s Māndākya-bhāṣya, Bibliotheca Indica, Vol. VII, p. 340. 'In verity, it is not constitutive cognition that is held to have the external for its object, but that cognition which is an affection of the intellect, i.e. here, the internal organ—and which is ignorance-imagined—has that, the external, for its object.'

The emphasis must not be laid on the word 'external', in this passage, for things external and internal—as will shortly be proved—are objects of the same species of cognition. It happens to be the cognition of the external that is mentioned in the passage on which Ananda Giri is annotating; and hence his importation of the epithet in question.

²चैतन्यसूक्ष्मः प्रज्ञा स्त्रद्रपमूता न वाह सविषयं प्रतिमास्ते
तत्त्वा विषयानपेक्षाणि। 'It is not the cognition which is one

with intelligence, and is constitutive thereof, that presents itself in respect of, i.e. that apprehends, external objects; for such cognition is irrelevant to objects.'

This extract just precedes the words cited in the last note. The reason for bringing in the word 'external' is the same in both places. Where the word 'objects' is last mentioned, it is unqualified. It applies to objects of whatever description.
no cognizing an object? If there can be, why not call the walls around us, and the roof overhead, forms of cognition? How have the Vedantins, by changing names, forgotten the genuine nature of things! By giving the titles of internal organ, unintelligent, etc., to that which is really intelligent, or the cognizer of objects, they have brought themselves to regard it as unintelligent. On the other hand, by applying to that which is unintelligent, and cognizes nothing, namely, their 'spirit', the epithets of essential cognition, self-illuminated, etc., they have passed to look upon it as intelligent. Can a pebble be transformed into a diamond by one's calling it so?

It can never be said of the pandits, whatever subject they may be handling, that they leave their views but partially explained. Cognition relative to an object

The ensuing couplet occurs, it is said, in the Ashtāvākragītā:

अज्ज्ञानाद भावित यत्रें सोदर्मसिम निरखन: ।
झ्वाता झानं तथा झेयं वित्यं नारलित वास्तवमृ ।

'These three, the cognition, and the cognizer, cognizable, are not true. He in whom, owing to ignorance, this triad appears as true am I, emotionless.'

Since all these are false, Brahma, being postulated as true, is no cognizer, and, likewise, has no cognition of objects in his essence.

See, also, the passage from the Yoga-vaṣishtha, at p. 245, in which that cognition which is of the essence of spirit is plainly taken to have no relation to objects, whether external or internal.

1 Compare Coleridge's Thesis I: 'Truth is correlative to being. Knowledge without a correspondent reality is no knowledge; if we know, there must be something known by us. "To know" is, in its very essence, a verb active.' Biographia Literaria, Vol. I, p. 268.
they divide into memorial and non-memorial. The non-memorial the Vedāntins discriminate into six sorts, and allot an instrument to each. Among these sorts are included the cognition of Īśvara, and that of the soul. On this topic the Vedāntins discourse with great diffuseness, and lay down precisely how it is that Īśvara cognizes, and how it is that the soul

1 These instruments are thus specified in the Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 2: तानि च प्रमाणानि वद्ध प्रयत्नावृमोनोपमानागमानिः-पर्यप्पलक्षिष्ठमेदात।

2 Concerning perception, we read: तच् च प्रयत्न पुनर्दिनिः जीवसाधनेशरसाधन चेति | Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. S. ‘And that perception, again, is of two kinds; that in which soul is the witness, and that in which Īśvara is so.’

It is meant, that one sort is the soul’s, and that the other is Īśvara’s.

3 यथा विषयेन्द्रियसत्वकपिकारणबन्धन जीवोपाध्यत्तःकरणस्य वृत्तिमेदा जायन्ते तथा सृज्यमान्याणिकर्मवशेष परमेश्वरोपाध्येषाः इदमिदानो ज्ञात्यमिदमिदानिः पालयित्यमिदमिदानिः संहित्यमिदमिदाकार जायन्ते | Vedānta-paribhāṣā, pp 9-10. ‘In like manner as, from connexion of an organ of sense with an object, or other cause, diverse affections are produced in the internal organ, the soul’s associate; so, from the desert of creatures destined to be brought forth, there arise, in illusion, the associate of supreme Īśvara, various affections, in the form of “This is now to be created”, “This is now to be cared for”, “This is now to be done away”, etc.’

Also the passage from the Vedānta-sīkṣāmanī, adduced at p. 273. Īśvara’s apprehension, will, and activity are there said to be affections of the internal organ.
cognizes. Besides the sorts of cognition here spoken of, memorial and non-memorial, none is recognized as relative to objects; and every one of these is defined as being an affection of the internal organ.¹

With us, the eyes and other senses, to which the Naiyāyikas add the mind, are only media of cognition. Not so, however, with the Vedāntins, is their internal organ: it is the apprehender of objects, and the sole apprehender thereof;² though, from their perplexed style of expression, they seem to allot the function of apprehension to the soul, and that of a medium to the internal organ. Thus, they state distinctly, that ‘Perceptive right notion is intelligence itself’;³ and that ‘The subject of right notion is intelligence

¹ In dreamless sleep even, maintain the Vedāntins, a sort of cognition has place. This cognition is an exception, as to its origin. Still, it is an affection, one evolved from ignorance; and it is not of the essence of spirit. During dreamless sleep, the internal organ, the ordinary producer of cognition, is thought to be dissolved. See the Vedānta-sūtra, p. 6.

It is a momentous error to suppose, as has recently been done, that the cognition which the Naiyāyikas count for one of their four and twenty qualities is claimed, by the Vedāntins, under the title of chīt, as constitutive of Brahma. That cognition is, indeed, acknowledged by the Vedāntins, but, being relative to objects, is an affection of the internal organ. The Naiyāyikas, on the other hand, consider it to be a property of the soul; and, on this very account, they are lightly reputed by the Vedāntins and Sāṅkhyaśas. See The Bible for the Pudāits, Introduction, pp. 45–64, where the error referred to is committed.

² The Vedāntin’s internal organ has erroneously been called a medium of cognition, in a passage soon to be cited from Christianity contrasted, etc.

³ प्रत्यक्षप्रमा चायत चैतन्यमेव | Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 2.
appropriated to the internal organ;’¹ etc. Lest my readers should here be in doubt,² I will first evince, that the cognition which we call so, the cognizing of objects, is, in the Vedānta, nothing but an affection of the internal organ; whence it follows, that only the internal organ is a cognizer. And then I intend to show what we are to understand by the Vedāntins’ applying the designations of right notion and subject of right notion to intelligence, that is to say, Brahma.

We find an object of perception defined as ‘non-difference from the subject of right notion.’³ Intelligence appropriated to the internal organ is meant by the expression ‘subject of right notion;’ and it is said, that ‘Non-difference from the subject of right notion is not here denotative of oneness with it, but is the non-possession of an existence distinct from that of the subject of right notion.’⁴ I explain. In the view of the Vedāntins, as silver is imagined in nacre, so the world is imagined in Brahma; and, as

¹अन्तःकरणावल्चित्रेः चेतनं प्रमात्चेतनस्यः | Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 4.
²There is very much in this section, and especially in the present chapter and that immediately succeeding, which the author would have thought it quite unnecessary to write, but for his making acquaintance with Dr. J. R. Ballantyne’s Christianity contrasted with the Hindu Philosophy.
³प्रमात्क्षेत्रस्यः | Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 6.
⁴प्रमात्क्षेत्रेऽन्धे नाम न तावदैक्यं किन्तु प्रमात्स्तत्तत्त्विश्लितः-सत्ताक्षबाभावः | Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 6.
the existence of the silver is one with that of the nacre, so is the existence of the world one with that of Brahma. The drift of this is, that the silver and the world, as such, are nothing, but, as nacre and as Brahma, severally, have true existence. It is further stated, that, on one’s perceiving a jar, the jar becomes, in the following manner, non-different from the subject of right notion. When the jar is seen, an effluence from the internal organ passes through the eye to it, and takes its form. This effluence of the internal organ is called an affection. When, therefore, the internal organ thus reaches the jar, at that place intelligence appropriated to the internal organ, namely the subject of right notion, and the jar-appropriated intelligence, in which the jar is imagined, become one; just as, if one brings a jar into the house, the jar-appropriated ether and the house-appropriated ether become one. In the way lately stated, the existence of the jar is not different from that of the jar-appropriated intelligence, one with the subject of right notion; and hence the jar becomes non-different from that subject. Thus, the definition of object of perception, cited just above, applies to a jar seen with the eye. In reply to an objection suggested to that definition, it is said, that the subject of right notion must be understood to be ‘associated with the affection which has taken the form of the given object of perception.’ To this, again, it is excepted, that, with such a qualification, the definition is inapplicable to

¹
tatadvakaraśāyupahitavastyaśāpi pramāṇavikṣepanāt | Vedānta-
paribhāshā, p. 6.
an affection. As a jar is an object of perception, so is an affection; and, therefore, the definition of object of perception ought to cover affection also. The objection just mentioned is expressed thus: ‘In this case, there is the exclusion of affection; for, inasmuch as, from fear of an infinite regress, a second affection cognizing the primary affection cannot be acknowledged, the definition aforesaid, giving to the subject of right notion the characteristic of associatedness with the affection that has taken the form of it, that is, of its object, is not inclusive of that affection here considered as the object of perception, which ought to be comprehended by the definition.’ To this it is rejoined: ‘Though, from fear of an infinite regress, we do not acknowledge, that the affection is cognized by a second affection, still, since it is acknowledged, that it is self-cognized, the definition, “to possess an existence non-different from that of intelligence, the subject of right notion, associated with affection cognizing it, viz. the object of perception,” is applicable to it, namely to the affection which is the object of perception.’

This proves, that, in the account of the Vedántins, an

1 नन्दे वृत्ताख्याति: अनवभामिया वृत्तिगोचरत्युस्तयनव्रूपे-कारणेण तत् खाकाशयुपहितविष्टितोक्तकल्पणाभावादिति । Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 7.

2 अनवभामिया वृत्तिव्यये स्त्राविष्टीयेको खविष्पायलभ्यप्रा-मेन खविष्पायबुर्युपहितमात्रेतन्याभिमिचसत्ताक्लस्ततःप्रितप्रस्थ-वात। Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 7.
‘affection’ is always a matter of consciousness. If, however, such an affection be not cognition itself, but, like the eye, or the ear, a medium of cognition, how can it be an object of immediate consciousness? Is any one conscious of an immediate consciousness of such a medium of cognition? Do the Naiyāyikas, who call the mind an internal organ only, in other words, simply a medium of cognition, like the eye, etc., ever declare, that it becomes an object of immediate consciousness? Of our cognition of a jar, or the like, we are, indeed, conscious, and so it is certain, that such an affection of the internal organ as has here been dwelt on is nothing but what we call cognition. Moreover, as I made out, when discussing the Sānkhya, our consciousness of the qualities of our souls, cognition, etc., is not distinct from those qualities; a notion which turns out to have the concurrence of the Vedāntins: since, as we have seen, they do not hold, that an affection is cognized by a secondary affection, that is to say, in a distinct act

1 If the Vedāntins held the internal organ to be what its name promises, their tenet, that its affections are objects of consciousness, would be exposed to the following stricture, which is put into the mouth of an objector, and is answered by the simple denial, that the so-called internal organ is an organ:

ननु अन्तःकरणस्येद्विद्येत्या अतीद्विपलात कथं प्रत्यश्विषयतेति उन्नाते न तावद्नातःकरणमिद्विद्येत्यात्म भनमानसि। Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 3 ‘Since the internal organ is an organ of sense, and therefore is beyond cognition through the senses, how does it become an object of perception? The reply is, that there is no proof of the internal organs being an organ of sense.'

A good deal to the same effect follows this passage.
of consciousness, but that it is self-cognized. In short, with them, the consciousness of cognition is not distinct from cognition itself.

That the Vedāntins hold such an affection to be cognition, and that it is the internal organ which cognizes, appears, further, from this passage: 'Affec-
tional cognition is a property of the mind. Of this the scripture, "Desire, resolve, doubt, trust, distrust, fixedness, unfixedness, shamefastness, understanding, fear—all these are of mind alone," is the proof. For cognition in the form of affection is intended by "under-
standing." Desire and the rest, as well, are, therefore, proved to be mental properties.'\(^1\) To this it is objected: 'If desire and the rest be properties of the internal organ, how can the consciousness, "I desire", "I fear", "I cognize", or the like, which cognizes them as properties of the soul, be accounted for?\(^2\) The answer given is: 'As, though a heated iron ball does not possess the power of scorching, still, by our imagining the identity with it of fire, the possessor

\(^1\) वृत्तिश्रुतप्रहाशण मनोधरसंचे च कामः सङ्कृत्यो विचिन्तिता 
श्रद्धा श्रद्धा वृत्तिश्रुतीमीरित अर्थ मन एवंितशृति: प्रमाणां 
वीशिश्वदेण वृत्तिश्रुतप्रहाशणामिधानात्। अतिव कामसद्रथिणि मनोधरेण 
लम्। Vedānta-paribhāshā, p. 3.

\(^2\) ननु कामादेर्तकारभुंमल्ले अहमित्वामि अहविभेदः 
त्त जानामीयासः अत्यध्यानविधामान: कथमपचते 
Vedānta-paribhāshā, p. 3.
of that power, it is supposed, that the iron ball scorches; so, by imagining the identity of the soul, i.e. of one’s self, with the internal organ, which evolves in the shape of happiness, etc., one supposes, “I am happy”, “I am miserable”, etc.’

Now, we are certain, that ‘I cognize’ denotes nothing but what we all call cognition; and what is thus denoted, it is here laid down, is a property of the internal organ, and an affection of the same.

Not only cognitions of external things, but also cognitions with regard to one’s self, or acts of consciousness, the Vedāntins consider to be affections of the internal organ. For of the latter species are the cognitions, ‘I cognize,’ ‘I desire,’ etc.; since it is only with the aid of some quality, as cognition, desire, or suchlike, that we become conscious of our souls. We can never cognize the simple substance of the soul; as the Naiyāyikas, too, acknowledge.

And, though the Vedāntin, like the Sānkhya, calls cognition, desire, etc., immediate objects of the witness himself, by which the soul is intended; still neither of them believes those qualities to be cognized by the soul

1 अयः पिण्डस्य दक्षिणामयेष्वयि दक्षिणामयवद्विताश्या-ध्यासाद् यथा अयो दहनीति न्यवहारः तथा सुखावाकर्पिरणां-म्यन्तः करणीकाध्यासादं सुखी अहं दुःखीयादिन्यवहारः:।

Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 3.

2 The soul becomes ‘an object of perception, from connexion with the specific qualities’. अद्व्यद्वी विशेष्यायोगत:।

Bhāshā-parichchheda, forty-eighth stanza.
unaccompanied by an affection of the internal organ. In other words, those qualities are cognized by the internal organ itself; and the calling them immediate objects of the witness is found, on scrutiny, to be deceptive.

Again, according to the Vedāntins, the immediate cognition of the soul, which is said to result from listening to the Vedānta, and from consideration and meditation on it—namely, the conviction, that one is

\textit{\textsuperscript{1}न हि वृत्तिः बिना साक्षिविषयलं केवलसाक्षिविषयवते किन्तु इन्द्रियानुमानादिप्रमाणमन्तरेण साक्षिविषयवत् | Vedānta-parībhāṣā, p. 7.} ‘For, to be cognizable by the witness alone is not to become an object of the witness independently of an affection of the internal organ, but it is to be an object of the witness apart from the aid of an organ of sense, inference, or such other instrument of right notion.’

\textit{\textsuperscript{2}तथा चास्तः करणतद्वर्तिक्दिषु केवलसाक्षिविषयवेषु वृद्धयु-हितवदनिक्षणाय सच्चान नास्य्याति | Vedānta-parībhāṣā, p. 7.} ‘Thus, then, since the definition of the object of perception, as containing the words, “associated with affection”, etc., is applicable to the internal organ, its properties, etc., which are cognizable by the witness alone, there is no deficiency.

Hence, the properties of the internal organ, though said to be cognizable by the witness alone, are, in truth, cognized by an affection of that organ. Otherwise, the definition just given would be inapplicable to those properties.

For “associated with the affection,” etc., see the first note at p. 313.

As the Vedāntins allege, of the properties of the internal organ, that they are cognizable by the witness alone, so do they allege respecting apparent objects also. Yet, for the cognition of these, too, they contend, that an affection of the internal organ is indispensable. See the Vedānta-parībhāṣā, pp. 7 and 11.
void of cognition, will, and all other qualities, and of all mutation, and is the pure Brahma—is itself an affection of the internal organ;¹ which affection is to be got rid of before emancipation is attainable.²

It must now be manifest, that the Vedāntins' affection of the internal organ, which has thus been described, is what we mean by cognition, or the apprehension of things, be they external, or internal, that is, of the soul and its qualities. And all the divisions which those philosophers make of this cognition, or cognition relative to objects, are affections, as aforesaid. Consequently, the cognition which is given out as a constituent of Brahma, is irrelative to objects; that is to say, it is not cognition of anything, whether himself or aught else.

As we have seen, the Vedāntins enunciate, that perceptive right notion is intelligence itself, and that the subject of right notion is intelligence appropriated to the internal organ. From this it seems as if, with them, intelligence itself were both cognition and cognizer, and as if the internal organ, its affections, etc., were only media of cognition. Those declarations are to be understood as follows. The term cognition, as they apply it to Brahma, means, they say, not cognizing or apprehending, but illuminating, and it is the internal organ that is illuminated, or made capable of cognizing. Thus, in order that their unintelligent Brahma should be made out constitutively cognition, they have altered the sense of the word cognition to such an extent, that, in their employment, it signifies,

¹ See the Vedānta-sāra, p. 21. ² See the Vedānta-sāra, p. 22.
primarily, to illuminate, and, only, metonymically to apprehend objects. That affection of the internal organ which—supposing such a thing to exist—ought to be veritable cognition, is, therefore, according to them, but metonymic cognition.\(^1\) By asserting, then, that perceptive right notion is intelligence itself, they mean, that intelligence illuminates the affection. When an affection proceeds from the internal organ, and portends itself to an object, a reflexion of intelligence falls on that affection; and so that affection is enabled to cognize the object. But for illumination from intelligence, it could cognize nothing; for it is pronounced, that ‘There, namely, as for an affection and the reflexion of Brahma therein, ignorance, veiling the object of cognition, a jar, for instance, is destroyed by the affection which takes the form of that object; and, by the reflection, the jar is made to appear.’\(^2\) By this it is not to be understood, that the jar is made to appear to the reflexion of intelligence, that is to say, that the reflexion cognizes the jar; but, that the jar is made to appear to the affection, in other words, that the affection is rendered capable of cognizing the jar. In proof, that such is the meaning of the Vedântins, I cite this single passage, from among innumerable passages that might be produced: ‘For the

\(^1\) ज्ञानायथेऽदकलाच् च वृत्तो ज्ञातेऽपचार। वेदान्तपरिबधाशः, p. 2. ‘An affection of the internal organ, since it is that to which cognition, i.e. Brahma, is appropriated, is itself metonymically denominated cognition.’

\(^2\) This well-known passage, a half-couplet, runs thus:

तत्राञ्ज्ञानं विया नस्येदाभासेन घटः स्फूरत्।
internal organ, if it were not illuminated by the light of intelligence, would be incapable of willing and apprehending its object.’\(^1\) It is evident, from this, that it is the very internal organ, illuminated by intelligence, that cognizes things.

But, when they give to intelligence appropriated to the internal organ the name of subject of right notion, we are to understand, that the character which they ascribe to intelligence associated with the internal organ, really belongs to that organ. They have a maxim—which all the other Systems subscribe to—that ‘An affirmation, or a negation, when predicated of anything together with its associate, if debarred from the object substantive, is to be referred to the object adjective.’\(^2\) In their opinion, the quality of being a cognizer cannot be assigned to the soul, and, consequently is debarred from it. For our cognition of objects is non-eternal; and, therefore, if it were regarded as constitutive of the soul, the soul would, to their thinking, be made out non-eternal and changeable.\(^3\) And, again, if they held that cognition to

\(^1\) This passage, in Sanskrit and English, will be found at the foot of p. 298.

\(^2\) स्विशेषणेः हि विधिनिषेधी विशेष्ये बाधे सति विशेषण-मुपास्त्तामात: !

The maxim is integrated by these words: विशेषणे बाधे सति विशेष्यमुपास्त्तामात: ! ‘Debarred from the object adjective, it is to be referred to the object substantive.’

\(^3\) इद्द्विन्यान्यानां बाधतःकरणति: क्षुद्रप्रज्ञानस्यानादिवलात् !

Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 42. ‘Cognition produced through the
belong to the soul, they must hold, that will, activity, happiness, misery, etc., also belong to it, and the result would be, that the soul is indeed a doer of good and evil, and an experiencer of three-fold misery: an issue most offensive to them; inasmuch as they would establish, that the soul is Brahma, eternally pure and free. Once more, their granting the soul to be a cognizer would involve the necessity of recognizing the relation of quality and subject as having place between it and its cognition: and even this much of an approach to duality they find unendurable. On such grounds as these, the Vedāntins would ascribe organs of sense is an affection of the internal organ; for constitutive cognition is beginningless.'

But it must not be thought, that sensation only is an affection of the internal organ; for every kind of cognition of objects is so.

1 No more are the Vedāntins than the Naiyāyikas, or mankind at large, able to conceive, that either cognition, or any other quality, can subsist without a substrate. For that cognition, with them, which alone deserves to be thus designated, namely, an affection of the internal organ, has a substrate in that organ. See the first extract from p. 3 of the Vedānta-paribhāśā, at p. 313. That cognition which is thought to be constitutive of Brahma is cognition only nominally, not properly, and hence is not a quality. It does not, therefore, stand in need of any substrate.

The Vedāntins, and the Śāṅkhyas also, do not discriminate so sharply as the Naiyāyikas between substance and quality. The latter hold them to differ in their very essence; while the former consider them to be co-essential. For, in the account of these, all things but spirit are evolutions from one root: illusion with the Vedāntins, and nature with the Śāṅkhyas. Still, they take thus much of distinction between substance and quality, as to regard them as being, severally, substrate and property.
cognition and all other qualities to the internal organ, and keep the soul entirely a stranger thereto. And the soul, with them, is itself Brahma.¹

I have seen it stated, that only the soul requires an internal organ; since, except for its aid, the soul cannot apprehend: but, as for Brahma, he can apprehend all things without its aid. And so it has been attempted to prove, that Brahma's cognition is real cognition.² All this is quite opposed to the Vedānta. I have shown, that it is wrong to regard the internal organ, in that system, as a medium of the soul's cognition; since, on examination, it is found to be no such medium, but itself the cognizer. That which lies beyond this organ is the soul, which never cognizes: and soul is Brahma. Of the soul there are two portions, Brahma and the internal organ. Hence, when the second is parted off, what remains is

¹ Spirit, one naturally supposes, is something intelligent. But the Vedāntins and the Sāṅkhyas are necessitated, by their theories, to assign all the characteristics of what is intelligent to their internal organ. Hence, spirit is left, to them, unintelligent. Nevertheless, their inward consciousness shames them from professing, in terms, that it is so. That they are thus shamed is the real reason why they give to spirit the epithet of jñāna, chīt, bodha, etc. At the same time, they deprive these epithets, as thus employed, of their sole proper import.

² 'Reverting to the charge of extravagance in the notion, that Brahm exists "without intellect, without intelligence, without even the consciousness of his own existence," it may be well to repeat here what the Vedāntin means by the terms thus rendered. By intellect (or mind) he means an internal organ which, in concert with the senses, brings the human soul into cognitive relation with the external. This, of course, he denies to Brahm, who, as Berkeley says of God, "perceives nothing by sense as we do."'—Christianity contrasted, etc., p. 47.
Brahma. This residue the Vedāntins declare to be essentially existence, intelligence, and joy; and, as has been made evident, it is destitute of all faculty of knowledge and apprehension.

The opinion about Brahma, just now arraigned, is based on the error of supposing, that by him is meant Īśvara; the difference between the two, which the Vedāntins inculcate, being overlooked. But Īśvara, no less than the soul, has, they declare, in order to cognize, etc., need of an internal organ. Īśvara, they say, is Brahma associated with illusion; and they hold Īśvara to be omniscient, omnipotent, etc. Yet the attributes of omniscience, omnipotence, etc., belong to Īśvara’s causal body, which is illusion, and not to the Brahma-portion of him. By consequence, all Īśvara’s attributes, nay, he himself, are false, and imagined by ignorance.

Every doubt of the reader, as to the nature of Brahma’s cognition, must, by this time, have been dispelled. Alike parviscience and omniscience, alike knowledge of himself and knowledge of what is not himself, are maintained, by the Vedāntins, to be unworthy of Brahma. What sort of cognition, therefore, can that be which they consider as one of his constituents?

1 That this difference is overlooked in Christianity contrasted, etc., is evident from three things. First, the word Brahma is everywhere translated thereby ‘God.’ Secondly, the attributes of omnipotence, omniscience, etc., are attributed to Brahma. Thirdly, no intimation even is put forth of any distinction, in the opinion of the Vedāntins, between Brahma and Īśvara.

2 See note at p. 288.
CHAPTER VI

Strictures on the Position of the Vedāntins, that the world is False; and a Reply to those who suppose, that the Vedāntins' Views respecting External Things accord with those of Berkeley.

It is maintained, by the Vedāntins, that 'The world is false'; in other words, that it owes its origin to ignorance: the truth being, it is alleged, that it never has existed, and does not exist, and never will exist. To this effect the Śiva-gītā declares: 'Just as the terrible snake that is imagined in the rope neither had origin, nor is, nor is to be destroyed; so the world, which has assumed an appearance simply by force of thy illusion, exists in thee, Nilakanṭha.'

I demand of the Vedāntins, How is it that you assert falseness of the world, which is certified to us,

1 रज्जू मूलज्ञो भयदो यथैव
न जायते नासिति न चैति नाशमू ।
बनमायया केवलमातिरूपं
तथैव विरू लयिनीलंकषः ॥

No manuscript of the Śiva-gītā is at this moment at hand; so that the chapter and verse where this stanza occurs cannot be stated.
by the senses, etc., to be true? Since you thus despise those proofs, what credit can be attached to anything that you advance? Proceeding in this way, you unsettle the foundations of everything, whether as regards this world, or as regards the next. And, on your own grounds, how can you refute the doctrines of others, or establish your own?

Perhaps, you will urge, that, since the senses, etc., often deceive us, they are totally unreliable. For instance, we are sure, that we see chariots, elephants, and other things, in our dreams; and yet they are proved to be false. I reply, that, if a seeming proof is made out, by a real proof, to be faulty, we reject it. But how can we contemn a proof which cannot be shown to be faulty? As for the things that we see in dreams, we call them false, because, on awaking, we find them to be so; and their falsity, as being matter of every-day experience, is indubitable. But who has ever found the external objects of nature to be false? Has not every man of all generations borne evidence to their truth?

If you say, that, to a man in dreamless sleep, the world disappears, and that his experience goes to disprove the truth of the world, I demur to the conclusion; since, a man’s cognition being then suspended, he cannot be brought forward as witness for anything that then had place. It is the belief of the Vedāntins, that, even in dreamless sleep, there subsists a sort of cognition.¹ Let this be granted: still, external things are not proved, thereby, to be false. To form

¹ See note at p. 308.
any judgement whatever about them is not competent to his cognition; and therefore, it cannot conclude their falsity. In like manner, a blind man is able to appreciate sound, touch, etc., but not colours; and so he can be no witness of their truth, or of their falseness.

I would also remind the reader of the argument I employed, when discussing the Sānkhya, to prove the existence of God. When we inspect the structure of the world, we become convinced, that it was planned, consciously, by some one, for a multiplicity of ends; and this consideration confutes your view, that the world is simply apparent,¹ and that eternal ignorance is the ground of its semblance.

Berkeley maintains, that objects of sense are only ideas, they having no existence in themselves and apart from perception. This is immaterialism. But he does not hold, that the things which we see, touch, etc., are false: his meaning is, that they are forms of perception. The perception of them constitutes, in his view, their existence; whereas, the common opinion is, that they exist independently of perception. He does not say, however, they are imaginations of

¹ It is true, that the Vedāntins hold the world to be constructed by an intelligent designer, Īśvara; and such construction they believe, from the standing point of practical existence, to have actually taken place. This view of theirs arises however, from their taking practical things to be real, which things, at the same time, they would prove to be nothing—only ignorance-imagined: a combination of incompatible notions is ignored in the text, it being aimed at the latter of those notions; that which, with the Vedāntins, is by much the more essential.
eternal ignorance, and, the Vedānta doctrine, that, on the removal of ignorance, and attainment of right apprehension, the whole world disappears, like a dream on awaking, he knows nothing of whatsoever. Whether his theory be tenable, or untenable, is a matter I am not here concerned with. My present purpose is, to show, that the doctrine of the Vedānta concerning the external world, besides being in conflict with the common opinion, has not so much as a resemblance to that of Berkeley. Yet, a resemblance here has been asserted. It has been asserted, that the Vedāntins, when they call sensible objects practical, do not mean, that they are false, but only that they do not exist apart from perception; and that the world is said, in the Vedānta, to be false, simply from ambiguousness of phraseology.¹

But, for my part, I understand the Vedānta otherwise. First; according to Berkeley, objects of sense are forms of perception; but, according to the Vedāntins, objects of sense are distinct from perception, and independent of it. The Vedāntins, I have already shown, consider, that the cognition which apprehends external things is an affection of the internal organ, let that cognition be perception, or inference, etc.; and that the objects which that affection cognizes are distinct from the affection itself, and have existence independent of it.² An affection is an evolution from

¹ See Christianity contrasted, etc., pp. 38–42.
² यथा तदागोदकं चिछ्रान्त निर्गतं कुल्यात्मनं केदारान् प्रविश्य तद्देव चतुष्कोणायाकारं भवति तथा तैजसमंतःकरण-
the internal organ; but the objects which it cognizes are evolutions from ignorance, or illusion. And it must not be forgotten, that ignorance is not the reverse of right apprehension, mistake; for, in that case, it would itself be an affection of the internal organ; since both right apprehension and wrong apprehension

मपि चक्षुरागिद्वरा घटादिविपयदशं गच्छि घटादिविशिष्याकारेण परिणमते। स एव परिणामो वृत्तिरिच्च्यते। अनुमित्यादिस्थः तु अन्तःकरणस्य न वहन्यादिदेशणमस्य वहन्यादेशक्षेरावसायिक-कार्यं। तथा चाय घट इति दियादिप्रयक्षक्षेष्ठः घटादेशदायकार-वृत्तेऽव बहिरङ्गन देसो समवस्थानात तदुपयाविविष्यं वैत्यंमेकः-मेव विभाजकक्रोण्यं तः करणवृत्तिघटादिविशिष्यायोरेकदेशः खिंचिति-लेन मेदाजनकलात। अतः मठान्तर्वित्तिघटाविविष्याकाशः न मठायशादि मिठुते।

Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 4. 'As the water of a reservoir, issuing through apertures, enters the fields rillwise, and becomes, like them, quadrangular, or of other shapes; so the passionable internal organ, through the medium of the eye, or the like, extends itself to the place occupied by a jar, or other object, and is evolved in the form thereof. This same evolution is called an affection. But, in the case of inferential cognition, etc., there is no extension, on the part of the internal organ, to the locality of the fire, etc., because these are not brought into connexion with the eye, etc. So, then, in the case of such a perception as "This is a jar," since the jar and the affection of like conformation thereto take up one and the same space, externally to the body, the intelligence appropriated to both, viz. the jar and the affection, is but one: for, although the affection of the internal organ, and the object, as the jar, are two dividers of intelligence, or Brahma; still, since, in the present instance, they take up one and the-
are such affections. In the Vedānta, ignorance, like the ‘nature’ of the Sāṅkhya, is an unintelligent substance. As the Sāṅkhya takes the visible world to be an evolution from nature, so do the Vedāntins regard it as being an evolution from ignorance.\(^1\) Of same space, they do not operate to divide the affection-appropriated intelligence from the jar-appropriated intelligence. On this very account, the ether appropriated to a jar within the house does not differ from the ether of the house itself.’

The purpose of all this is to show, that, perception, affection-appropriated Brahma and object-appropriated Brahma are unified, for to show this is necessary, in the work cited, to explain its definition of perception.

We have seen it stated, that, in perception, the affection of the internal organ extends itself to the spot already occupied by the object perceived. In inferential or other cognition than perception, there is, however, no such extension of the affection; and it is, further, laid down, that the object and the affection are two several dividers of intelligence, or Brahma. In inferential cognition, etc., they serve as such; but not so in perception. From this it is clear, that an object is distinct from, and independent of, the affection, that is to say, the cognition, which apprehends it.

Had not an attempt been made to father Berkeleianism upon the Vedāntins, it would have been most supererogatory to refer to any proof of the position, that the Vedāntins take objects to exist irrespectively of their being perceived. From the standing point of true existence, not only objects, but the perception of them, are nothing; but, from that standing point whence perception is real, objects likewise are held to be so, and not to be dependent on perception.

Much too ready are learned foreigners to identify Indian notions with those of European speculators, ancient and modern. What are so hastily taken to be correspondences will generally turn out, on further examination, to be mere fancied resemblances.

\(^{1}\) Not simply practical things, but, strangely enough, apparent things also, are maintained, by the Vedāntins, to exist separately
the confusion which besets this point I shall treat in the seventh and ninth chapters.

This, therefore, is certain, that the Vedāntins concur with the generality of mankind as concerns the existence of external things apart from perception. Very little indeed have they of the philosophic profundity of a Berkeley.

Secondly, though the Vedāntins agree with the bulk of men, as just stated, they take a line of their own, in saying, that objects of sense are imaginations of ignorance, or false. And herein they differ from Berkeley, too, who does not call such objects false, but forms of perception, and acknowledges them to be true, in the current sense of the term. The Vedāntins compare the objects of the senses to a snake surmised in a rope, or to silver fancied in nacre, and hold them to be altogether false, and so our cognition of them to be erroneous. Hence, several of the great Vedāntin doctors consider the world to be, in their technical language, apparent; and they add, that the regarding the world as belonging to another category than that of nacreine silver, i.e. the regarding it as practical, is prompted by a desire to assist the uninitiate.

Thirdly, in the Vedānta system, not only are objects from, and independently of, the apprehension of them. See a passage in the seventh page of the Vedānta-paribhāśā, beginning अत एव प्रातिभासिकरजत्त्यत्रे ि and the extract from the same work, cited at p. 234. To one aware, that the Vedāntins hold notions, such as that referred to, there must seem to be exceedingly slight grounds for comparing them as to subtlety, with Berkeley.
of cognition imaginations of ignorance, and false, but cognition itself is so: for cognition is an affection of the internal organ; and, not being Brahma, it is to be classed with imaginations of ignorance, and falsities; just like a jar, or any other external thing. Objects and the cognizing them are, thus, held to be alike false. ¹ How vast a gulf does this single point of difference place between the Vedānta and Berkeleianism!

Fourthly, in the theory of Berkeley, the world, birth, death, Heaven, Hell, and the happiness and misery arising therefrom, though forms of perception, are true, and not of such a nature, that they vanish away on the supervening of right apprehension. On the other hand, agreeably to the Vedāntins, when a man becomes convinced, that the objects which we cognize through our senses and other media of knowledge, are false, that is that they never existed, and do not now exist, and never will exist, and that Brahma

¹ Ānanda Giri, discoursing about the affection cognition, observes: न च सांपि वस्तुतस्तदिद्विश्वयतामः नम्भवति वस्तुः: क्षयमभावाद् बाह्यस्य विषयस्य कालपनिकलबाद्। अस्तस्तदिद्विश्वयवः प्रातिष्ठासिकमिलयथः। On Śankara Āchārya’s Māndūkyabhāshya, Bibliotheca Indica, Vol. VIII, p. 340. ‘Not even does that affection veritably take cognizance of such an external object; because, in truth it, the affection, does not itself exist, and because such an object is imaginary. By consequence, an affection’s cognizing such an object is apparent. This is the sense.’

See further, the couplet adduced from the Ashtāvakra-gītā, at p. 306.
alone, essentially existence, intellect, joy, is true, and that he is that man’s self, all those objects dissolve into nothingness; as happens with nacreine silver, on our discerning nacre, mistaken for silver, to be nacre. Thus, it is said, ‘Like nacreine silver, the world appears true, so long as Brahma, the substrate of all, without a second, remains unknown.’

When, therefore, the Vedântins declare, that this world, and the next, and all things thereto pertaining, are falsifiable by right apprehension, let no one explain their language to import, that, when a man acquires such apprehension, this world, and the next, etc., through God’s grace, or from some other cause, become as nothing to him. It is not, the Vedântins themselves teach, that they become as nothing, but strictly nothing; they being recognized as illusive, and they become nothing in consequence of the acquisition of right apprehension, and from no other cause whatever. It is laid down, that there are two sorts of riddance of the products of ignorance. One, called cessation, takes place when, by the uprise of a new and opponent affection of the internal organ, or by getting quit of defects, an erroneous affection is destroyed, and, of course, its object. It is illustrated by the shattering a jar with a pestle. The other, known as falsification, is when the right perception of the

¹ तावत् सत्वं जगद् भाति शुक्लिकारजतं यथा ।
यावपर न शायते ब्रह्म सत्त्विविद्यानमहम् ॥

This is the seventh couplet of the Ātma-bodha, p. 4, of the Mirzapore edition of 1852.
nature of a thing dispels all ignorance, and the error regarding the thing, and the object of that error.1

1 कार्यिविनाशो हि द्विविधः कष्टिद्वायानं सह कष्टित
tु विश्मान आयोपादाने । आवी बाबः द्वितीयस्तु निब्रृत्तिः ।
आध्यस्य कारणमविद्यानतत्त्वसङ्गांतिकारस्तेन विनोपादानमभूताया
अविश्वास्य अनिवृत्ते । द्वितीयस्य कारण विरोधिवृक्ष्युतपतिर्दैर्घ्य-
निवृत्तिवर्गे । तदेह बहसास्यालकारभावात समप्रपञ्चो मा बालिष्ठ
सुसल्प्रहारण घटादरिव विरोधिवृक्ष्यानांतरोदयेन सजनकोभूत-
निद्वादिदेशनाथन वा स्थादिनिवृत्तः को बिरोधः । Vedānta-
paribhāṣā, p. 13. ‘Destruction of the products of ignorance is twofold: the one, where the material cause, viz. ignorance is included; the other, where the material cause remains untouched. The first is denominated falsification; the second, cessation. Of the former the cause is, the intuition of the true nature of the substrate over which a false thing is imagined; since, but for this intuition, nescience, or ignorance, the material cause, cannot be done away. Of the latter the cause is, the origination of an antagonistic affection or else the abolition of defects. Hence, in the present instance, by reason of the non-
existence of the intuition of Brahma, the substrate of all imaginary objects, however the world of dreams is not falsified, what incongruity is there in supposing, that, as a jar, or the like, is destroyed by the blow of a pestle, so, by the presentation of another and antagonistic conception, or by the discontinuance of sleep, or other defect, originate thereon, i.e. of dreaming, the chariot, or other thing dreamt of, ceases?’

It is worth observing, that the Vedāntins are not so accurate in the employment of their peculiar phraseology, as not frequently to use nivṛti, ‘cessation,’ where they ought, agreeably to their own definitions, to use bāḍha, ‘falsification.’ Thus, in the extract from the Vedānta-paribhāṣā, p. 32, given at
Thus it occurs in the case of nacre, so often mentioned; and equally false with nacreine silver become, according to the Vedanta, the whole world, and the ignorance which originates it, as soon as one has mastered the knowledge of Brahma.

p. 280, Dharmarāja would have done better, had he written: ब्रह्माज्ञानवाध्यतया. The translation supposes the required change to have been made.

Two views, entertained touching the cause of things like nacreine silver, are referred to in the passage quoted below. It is according to the first only, that those things are held to be falsified by right apprehension of what is mistaken for them. According to the second view, such things, owing to the right apprehension in question, simply cease to exist.

वेदांत-परिभाषा, pp. 13–14. ‘And so, on the opinion, that nacreine silver is a product of nescience residing in anti obscuring, nacre-appropriated intelligence, there results, from the cognition, “This is nacre,” falsification of silver, and of the ignorance pertaining to that nacre. But on the opinion, that nacreine silver is a product of radical nescience, i.e. of the ignorance which resides in and obscures pure Brahma, and is the cause of the entire universe, since such nescience, the material cause of such silver, is removable solely by intuition of Brahma, not by cognition of the true nature of nacre, there ensues, as the fruit of right apprehension of nacre, nothing more than the cessation of silver; in the same way as a jar is destroyed by the blow of a pestle.’
CHAPTER VII

The Soul, being subject to Ignorance, cannot, as the Vedántins hold, be One with the Supreme Spirit; a Description of Ignorance; and an Argument to show, that the Denial of the Soul’s Identity with Brahma is not set aside by taking the Epithet of False, as applied to Ignorance, in the Acceptation of Perishable.

It is a maxim of the Vedánta, that ‘The soul is Brahma itself, and nothing other.’ How, I would ask the Vedántins, can this be? For they assert, that, on the one hand, soul errs by reason of ignorance; and that, on the other hand, Brahma is, in essence, ever pure, intelligent, and free, and can never for a moment be otherwise. Still they maintain, that the soul is Brahma; and, with intent to reconcile their contradiction, they resort to the most elaborate mystification. Some among them say, that the reflexion of Brahma in the internal organ is soul,¹ and that to the soul appertains all error; wherefore error has no connexion with Brahma.

¹ See the passage from the Vedánta-paribhāshā, p. 41, cited at p. 257.
Such as say thus, the reflexionists, find no difficulty in maintaining, that the soul—a reflexion, with them—is liable to error, and that Brahma is exempt therefrom. Other Vedāntins, however—those who hold the soul to be Brahma as appropriated to the internal organ—the appropriationists, perceive, that, if the soul be simply as they allege, its defects must be participated by Brahma. In expatiating on this point, they disclose one of their mysteries. Though, in their view, the soul is Brahma as appropriated to the internal organ, and though it is said to err; yet, in truth, all its qualities, as cognition, will, etc., and error, likewise, belong not to its Brahma-portion, but to its associate, the internal organ; in accordance with the maxim, ‘An affirmation, or a negation,’ etc.

But the reader should be reminded, that the language of the reflexionists, no less than that of the appropriationists, is deceptive here. For, since, as has been shown, it is neither the reflexion of Brahma in the internal organ, nor Brahma as appropriated to that organ, to which the qualities of the soul truly appertain, but the internal organ, it is this that the Vedāntins ought to consider to be soul.

None of those philosophers entertain the opinion, that the internal organ is the soul. When pressed with the question, how the soul, which is obnoxious to error, can be Brahma, they distinctly declare, that

---

1 In Sanskrit, pratibimba-vādin.
2 See the passage from the Vedānta-vaibhāṣā, p. 8 cited at p. 257.
3 In Sanskrit, avachchhinna-vādins.
4 This maxim is given in full at p. 318.
error affects the internal organ, not him. I tell the Vedāntins, therefore, that, if that in which error resides is different from the Supreme Spirit, when you instruct it to regard itself as Brahma, you are practising deception. For who is it that you so instruct? Is it one who is in error? Or is it the purē, intelligent, free Brahma? If the former, you have declared, that it is different from Brahma; and, consequently, when you teach it, that itself is Brahma, you are misleading. If the latter, your labour is quite needless.

It is easy to perceive how the appropriationists satisfy themselves, that the soul is Brahma. Brahma, they argue, as appropriated to the internal organ, does not differ from the pure Brahma; just as the ether appropriated to a jar does not differ from the omnipresent ether. To be restored to Brahmahood, all that the soul has to do is, to get rid of the internal organ, which is false, and simply imagined by ignorance to exist: and it is right apprehension which abolishes that organ and all its qualities. But how do the reflexionists make out the soul to be one with Brahma? With them, as with all other Vedāntins, reflexions of every description—whether of objects in a mirror, or the like, or that of Brahma in the internal organ—are false, literally false, as nacreine silver is; not false as the Sāṅkhyas maintain them to be. And yet they are false only as reflexions: in their identity with the things reflected, they are true. For, in the case of a reflection, it is held, that what one beholds is the thing reflected; only that, through misapprehension, it appears to be different from it, and in a place where
the thing is not actually located. Similar thereto is nacreous silver, which is nothing but nacre under the appearance of silver. It is false, as silver, but veritable, as nacre.

Of course, this statement will suggest doubts to the reader. First, there is the absurdity of comparing a reflexion and what is reflected to nacreous silver and nacre; and, again, if the soul, which is laid down as being a reflexion of Brahma, is, after all, nothing but Brahma, how can it be subject to error? If the soul be a reflexion, not when it is viewed as Brahma, but only when it is misapprehensively viewed as a reflexion, and as something different from Brahma, it comes out, that it is a nonentity.  

1 मूळभास्करे दर्पणे द्यवावज्ज नात यथावज्ज यत्तु।
चित्रभास्करे वैष्णु जीवोद्धि तद्वृत्
स नियोपलिङ्गाः पोहिनामाः।

'I am that Spirit—constitutively eternal apprehension—which manifests itself as soul. For, similar to the reflexion of the face beheld in a mirror—which reflexion is nothing whatever, taken apart from the face—is the soul, the reflexion of intelligence or Spirit, in intellects, or internal organs.'

This is the fifth couplet of the Hastimalaka, which is credulously imputed to Sankara-Acharya. The poem is in high esteem among the Vedantins.

2 Vijnana Bhikshu meets as follows the doctrine animadverted on in the text: प्रतिबिम्बवार तृच्छले प्रतिबिम्बवार- 
जीवस्य विम्बवारहाराणं सहायमेदानपूर्णः: सदस्तोरमेदानपूर्णः।
sees the soul as a reflexion? For the soul itself is proved to be nothing; and Brahma is not liable to error: and, therefore, a third party is needed to make an error here possible.

But the reader must not allow himself to be perplexed or disheartened. If we have already reached what is clearly preposterous, there are more things of the same character awaiting us.

It is impossible for us to recognize as soul anything other than that which is endowed with apprehension, will, and other like qualities; and the Vedântins assign away these qualities to the internal organ. As for what they call ignorance, which they distinguish from error, or misapprehension, they are constrained to ascribe it to the pure Brahma, and not to the internal organ. If it were a reality, we should be obliged to acknowledge, that, in the Vedânta, the soul is Brahma himself. But this ignorance, as we shall shortly discover, is wholly a thing of the imagination. A somewhat detailed account of it will now be given; and we shall learn what it is, and why the Vedântins are unable to refer it to the internal organ, and are forced to ascribe it to Brahma.

अतृप्तव चास्तमनानालसय शब्दमेदेन स्वकारापति: अद्वैताभुपपच्छेति। Yoga-bhâshya-vâritika, MS fol. 28 verso. 'If a reflexion be a nonentity, the soul, a reflexion, cannot be identical with Brahma, the object reflected; for there can be no identity of entity with nonentity. And, if it be not a nonentity, multitude of souls will be acknowledged in other terms than direct terms; and monism, etc., will go undemonstrated.'

22
The word ‘ignorance’ may mean absence of apprehension, and also misapprehension, or mistake. When the Vedāntin says, that the world is imagined by ignorance, common sense supposes, that he intends, by ignorance, misapprehension; since the absence of apprehension cannot imagine. He contends, however, that he intends, by it, neither the one nor the other.1 Nevertheless, he takes it to be the imaginer of false objects, and likewise to be eliminable by right apprehension. More than this, he accounts it a thing having an object; the object being, however, strange to say, not falsity, but verity. Accordingly, say what the Vedāntins may, it seems to me, on taking account of the characteristics they attribute to ignorance, that it is a combination of two ideas, namely, the absence of apprehension whose object is verity, and error in mistaking a falsity for a verity: for those characteristics fit nothing save such a combination.

The Vedāntins hold ignorance to have verity for its object; and this not a characteristic of mistake: for mistake is cognition whose object is falsity; as, for instance, the cognition of maccrine silver. But ignorance, the Vedāntins teach, has verity, that is, pure

1अज्ञानं तु सदस्ज्ञामनिर्वचनीयं लिगुणाल्पकं भावरूपं
ज्ञानविरोधं यत्किस्मिदिति बदन्ति। Vedānta-sāra, p. 4. ‘Ignorance, it is declared, is a something that cannot be described as either existent or non-existent; constituted of the three gunas; an entity; antagonistic to right apprehension.’

The translation runs as if the original were सत्वासत्त्वाम्यां, which it ought to have been.
Brahma, for its object. The Sankshepa-sārīraka says:
‘The impartite intellect alone is subject and object of ignorance.’
They declare, that ignorance of which the object is Brahma, is the cause of this world, a false thing; and so, that ignorance, whose object is nacre, is the cause of false silver. It appears, then, that ignorance, since verity is its object, is the absence of apprehension of the veritable. For, though the having verity for its object cannot be characteristic of absence of apprehension—just as it cannot characterize mistake—absence or negation not being an object-having thing; it is characteristic of apprehension. Hence, though it cannot be said, that the having verity for its object is characteristic of absence of apprehension, still, when the Vedaṇṭins assert, that ignorance has verity for its object, what there is of truth in their assertion—their confusion of ideas being rejected—may be expressed by saying, that ignorance is the absence of apprehension whose object is verity, that is, pure Brahma. And this absence of apprehension is, in my opinion, the power of concealment which they ascribe to ignorance; that is to say, its faculty of hiding verity.  

1 आश्रयवचिष्यलभागिनी
निर्विभागचित्रिश्रेष्ठ केवला ।

2 See the extract from the Vedaṇṭa-parabhāṣā, p. 10, cited at p. 232.

3 अस्मायज्ञानस्यास्तमानकं वरणविक्षेपनामकं शक्तिदूयमस्ति । अवरणात्मितिस्तातः *

* * * अज्ञान परिच्छेदम् प्रस्तामानसपरिच्छेदः
be but absence of the apprehension of it? But the Vedāntins, instead of acknowledging this power of concealment to be one with ignorance, regard ignorance as an entity, of which concealment is a power.

If they said no more than this about ignorance, we might conclude it to mean simply absence of apprehension. They consider it, however, to be the imaginer of the false world; and to be such an imaginer is the work of mistake, not of absence of apprehension. Ignorance, then, since they make it to be the imaginer of the false world, must be misapprehension, or mistake. This mistake is, in my opinion, the Vedāntins' second power of ignorance, its deluding power.¹ 'Delusion' is when the false appears in place of the veritable; and this is mistake. But the Vedāntins,

महसारिणमवलोकितवद्दिपिधायकतयायःग्राहतीवतादन्त साम-

यथे | Vedānta-sāra, pp. 6-7. 'Of this ignorance there are two faculties, known as concealment and delusion. The faculty of concealment * * * is a power such that, by it, ignorance, though limited, by veiling the mind of the beholder, as it were covers Spirit, unlimited and irrelative to the world.'

¹विक्षरशक्तिस्तु यथा रज्जवज्ञान साक्षरतःजो सङ्क्षत्तत्व सर्पी-

दिकम्भुविवति एवम्बश्वानमपि सङ्क्षृतात्मनि सङ्क्षत्तत्वा आकाशादि-

प्रवस्मभुविवति तादां सामयथे | Vedānta-sāra, p. 7. 'The faculty of delusion is a power thus illustrated. As ignorance about a rope produces, by its own force, a false snake, or the like, in the rope which it conceals; so radical ignorance, viz., that concerning pure Brahma, brings forth, by its own force, in the Spirit which itself conceals, the universe, made up of ether and the rest.'
instead of owning this power of delusion to be one with ignorance, hold it to be a power of ignorance.

I will show how the Vedántins here fall into error. Our cognition of the external world, that is, perception, inference, etc., is, to their thinking, misapprehension;¹ and, in order to keep Brahma pure from it, they appropriate it to the internal organ. But this wrong cognition they cannot identify with ignorance; since they are bent on making ignorance to be the cause of the whole world, so that it may be established as false. If they had said, that ignorance is mistake, an affection of the internal organ, then it might be, for them, the imaginer of the external world. But how could it imagine the internal organ?² And, if it does not, the internal organ cannot be proved, as they would prove it, to be false. Therefore, with intent to make ignorance the imaginer of the internal organ also,³ they insist, that it is something different from mistake.³ And here they are forced into fresh and greater absurdities.

¹ See the couplet cited in the Vedānta-pantāsha, given at p. 239.

² तव चित्मात्मतमसा जनिनं परिकल्पयवखलमेव जगत्।

‘Thy mind, generated by thy ignorance, imagines the entire universe.’

This half-couplet is from the Sankṣhepa-sārtraka.

³ It is remarkable, that Śāṅkara Āchārya himself was unguarded in the language he employed regarding this doctrine. In the passage quoted below, he makes ignorance to be one with mistake. तत्मेतमेवंलक्षणमध्यायं पप्पिता अविद्वेदिति मन्यन्ते।
THE HINDU PHILOSOPHICAL SYSTEMS

When the Vedántins contend, that ignorance is something different from mistake, though they call 

"Misapprehension of this description, just before laid down the learned hold to be nescience." But Rāmānanda, his commentator, redresses his laxity: अविद्याकार्यवादविचिति मन्यते

इत्यदः: | 'The import is, that they consider misapprehension, as being the product of nescience, to be itself nescience.' See the Bibliotheca Indica, No. 64, p. 16.

Here it may be observed, once for all, that, alike as to the Vedānta, and as to the other systems of Hindu philosophy, the higher we ascend the stream of time, the more frequent do we find unphilosophical inexactness of phraseology. This inexactness is, of course, most frequent of all in the works of the inventors of those systems. Their care, it should seem, was well-nigh exclusively bestowed upon broad principles; and the result was somewhat of vagueness, at least, in their modes of expression. Subsequent writers, as commentators and others have, to be sure, amended the phraseology of their predecessors. But it has been with a view to remove the appearance of inconsistency in them: it has not at all been with any intention of introducing new doctrines. These they have not introduced.

Of this assertion a justification is offered in the extract, and the annotation thereon, just adduced. With Śāṅkara, following the Upanishads, apprehension—whether correct or erroneous—will, activity, etc., are properties of the eternal organ; and, further, the whole universe, including the internal organ, is false, and imagined by ignorance, or nescience. How, then, in accordance with his views could misapprehension and nescience be identical?

It is desirable to keep ever before the mind the fact, that an uninitiated reader will come upon hundreds of terms and statements, in the expositions of Śāṅkara and other early Vedāntins, which, though seeming, at first sight, contradictory of many things asserted in this volume, are, in fact, not so, a right understanding of them requiring that they should be understood with certain qualifications. In order to a full acquaintance with these qualifications, a thorough-going study of the whole
it the imaginer of this false world, how can they say, that its imagining is like that of mistake? For mistake imagines by imputing existence to the non-existent; and hence its object is called false. The Vedāntins, in calling the world imagined of ignorance, with a view to establish its falsity, ought to have taken the imagining of ignorance to be like that of mistake; but this was difficult for them to admit, since they had already erred in viewing ignorance as a thing different from mistake. And see the difficulty consequent to them. Their 'ignorance,' or illusion, like the 'nature' of the Sānkhyas, now begins to appear to them an incognitive substance; and, as such, what sort of imagining can it possess? Like that of the 'nature' of the Sānkhyas, and that of the atoms of the Naiyāyikas, it is no longer imagining, but positively the material cause of the whole world. And what now? Does the world turn out to be true, and does non-duality disappear, and duality supersede it? To this one would be brought, reasoning from their account of ignorance. Yet these results they utterly repudiate. The verity of the world they will never grant. If they did, all their toil would be to no purpose. Neither could the soul be Brahma, nor could emancipation come from right apprehension; as will be made clear in the ninth chapter. The belief, that the internal organ, etc., the whole world, are false, is the very life of the monistic doctrine. However, as has been shown, such is the waywardness scheme of the Vedānta is indispensable. No criticism, that does not rest on a wide basis of Vedānta research, can be held satisfactory.
Nowhere, of a truth, but in the reveries of the Vedāntins.

Waiving, however, all this, and taking the words of Vedāntins as they deliver them, I urge, that, if the soul be ignorant, it cannot be identical with Brahma; for he, in their belief, is ever pure, intelligent, and free.¹

¹का पुनरियमविया | किं भानिन्ज्ञान किं वा भानिन्ज्ञान- कारणभूतं बस्त्रतरः | यदि भानिः सा कस् | न ब्रह्मण: तत्य स्त्रिविद्याधिपवात | न हि भास्करे तिमिस्त्र्यास्वकाशः | सम्भवति | न जीवनां तेषां ब्रह्मातिरेकिणामभावात | भान्त्र-भागादेव च तत्कारण वस्त्रतस्मयनुपप्पशमेव | ब्रह्मातिरेकां भानिन्ज्ञान तत्कारण वाद्युपगच्छतामदैत्त्याति: | किंकुक्ता च ब्रह्मोविया | न हि कारणान्तस्थति | स्त्राभावर्विति चेतु | कवः विद्याभावामविद्याभावं स्थाय। | Śāstra-dīpikā, MS fol. 58, recto. 'But what is this nescience? Is it misapprehension? Or something else, a cause of misapprehension? If misapprehension, whose? Not Brahma’s; for he, as you Vedāntins hold, is constitutively pure science. In the sun there can be no place for darkness. Nor can it be souls; for these, as you hold, are not distinct from Brahma. And, since, from your premises, misapprehension cannot exist, no more can a second thing, a cause thereof. Besides, for such as subscribe to misapprehension, or a cause of it, as an entity additional to Brahma, monism evaporates. To continue, whence sprang Brahma’s misapprehension? For there is no other cause with you, Brahma being the sole entity. If it be said, that it is natural to him, how, pray, can he whose nature is science be he whose nature is nescience?'
THE SOUL AND THE SUPREME SPIRIT 347

But the Vedāntins, though they are forced to locate ignorance in Brahma, still, in order to make him out to be essentially ever pure, intelligent, and free, maintain that ignorance itself is false. Most wonderful is this of all their wonders. And how is ignorance considered, by them, to be false? I must now address myself to answer this question.

On hearing, that the Vedāntins regard ignorance as the cause of the world’s appearing to be true, one would, of course, suppose, that this ignorance was understood, by them, to be itself true. For if ignorance did not actually exist, how could the world, which they hold to be a nonentity, have appearance? When a man mistakingly sees a snake in a rope, the snake is called false. At the same time, that man’s misapprehension is not said to be false, but true. The Vedāntins, however, maintain that ignorance is false. We ought, therefore, to inquire, how it is reckoned false, and what is gained to the Vedānta system by so reckoning it.

To the first inquiry we get two answers from the Vedāntins. One is given by those whose mastery of their doctrine is not perfect; while the other is returned by such as have penetrated their system to its innermost arcana. The latter answer I shall speak of in the next chapter. The former, that which one hears from the bulk of Hindus nowadays, I shall examine briefly at once.

This answer is, that ignorance is called false, inasmuch as it is eliminated by the supervening of right apprehension. But this is highly absurd. That is false which does not exist at all; but that which
exists, and is destroyed at a given time, is not false; but uneternal and perishable. If a Vedāntin replies, that, in his technical language, false means uneternal, I have to say, that the fault of ignorance in the ignorant Brahma cannot be got rid of by thus denominating his ignorance; nor can you thus prove him to be essentially pure, intelligent, and free. The goodness or badness of a thing depends upon its nature, not upon the epithets applied to it. Suppose, that some one held in general esteem goes mad; whereat his friends are in great grief. A man comes and assures them, that he is not mad; his madness is false. And he adds, that, according to his own way of speaking, he only is really mad, who has been so from birth. The person miscalled mad was quite in his right mind for the first five and twenty years of his life; and, therefore, his madness is false. Would this speech be of any consolation to the friends of the respected maniac? Without doubt, the Supreme Spirit is essentially ever pure, intelligent, and free—in the right sense of these terms; and He is so indefeasibly. Any so-called sacred book that asserts the contrary confutes, by its blasphemy, its pretensions to divine origin; and there can be no more certain mark of a false religion than such an assertion. In maintaining, that Brahma, as they describe him,

1 Just as Pārthasārathi says, in arguing against the Vedāntins, with reference to the universe. His words are उत्पत्तिविनाशयोगादनित्यतामार्भ स्यात् | Śāstra-dīpikā, MS fol. 58, recto. 'From being originated and destroyed, it is simply proved to be non-eternal, not false.'
is the Supreme Spirit, and in attributing to that Spirit unworthy and debasing attributes, the Vedāntins, though unconsciously, do Him the foulest dishonour.

Ordinary Vedāntins, whom one meets, those who know their doctrine but superficially, though they speak as I have stated, about the falsity of ignorance, entertain, in their minds, a different view. They do not merely believe, as they say they do, that ignorance is perishable, and therefore false, for Brahma, they cannot but feel, would not thus be freed from all defect. They indeed believe, like their better-informed co-religionists, that ignorance is absolutely nothing whatsoever: only they are at a loss to explain themselves.
CHAPTER VIII

Criticism of the Vedānta Tenet of the Falseness of Ignorance, as set forth in Standard Treatises, and as held by Well-read Advocates of the Theory.

Vedāntins, who have attained to a thorough comprehension of their system, maintain, that ignorance is imagined by ignorance, and therefore is false. You will ask, imagined by what ignorance? The answer is, by itself. To this purpose the Sankṣhepa-śārīraka says: ‘In the case of the ignorant one, ignorance is not of its essence; since, for ignorance to be essential to it would belie its nature—intelligence, unchangeable, and without a second. Assuredly, ignorance is caused by ignorance exclusively. Nor may self-supportedness here be charged: for, as spirit proves the existence of everything knowable, and of itself also, from possessing the power of cognition; similarly, self-ignorance may imagine itself and other things. Thus there is no difficulty.’ ¹ If, endeavouring to

¹ अज्ञानमध्यविदुषोऽस्य न तु खतोऽस्ति
चेतन्यनिर्विकृतताद्यताविरोधात्
establish such an impossibility as is here propounded, the Vedántins get confused, and plunge deeper than

अज्जातताण्यनवबोधिनिबधनेिष

नासफ्यान्ध्रयलमपि चोदियतविनमवल ||

आँत्वा प्रसाधयति वेदपदार्थानां

खात्मानपध्वगतिक्षमशक्तियोगात ||

खात्मानेवमयखरमात्मप्रशुक्ताती

शक्तं भवेदिति न किष्कन दौस्यमशि ||

Sarvajñatman denies, as we have seen, that his position involves self-supportedness; but the author of the Sâṅkhya Aphorisms, and Vijnâna Bhikshu, are of opinion, that the accusation is fairly brought home to the Vedántins. नाश- विधावशादेवारविधायोगो वक्तव्यः तथा चासपारमार्थिकत्वान न तथा सम्मु इति । तवासह ।

tatho gati dravyavānamyaśrayatmam ।

Abhidhāyamadavidhiścitā chaśānāmyaśrayalamaśrayatmam ।


‘But, let the connexion of nescience with spirit be alleged to have place because of nescience itself. Then, since it, nescience, will be untrue, no contact thereof, operative of change, will be wrought in spirit. With reference to this, it is declared, “If it, nescience, by supposition has place from the connexion of itself, there befalls mutual dependence.” “Mutual dependence,” i.e. self-supportedness: or else, an infinite regress—a supplementation here demanded.’
ever into error, small is the wonder. To illustrate the notion, that ignorance imagines itself, the author just cited instances the soul, which, through cognition, proves the existence of itself, no less than that of things external. But where is the parallelism? The illustration adduced is of no pertinence, except to decoy a man into a maze of words, and then to beguile him by a semblance of reasonableness. The author says, that the soul, by its cognition, proves, that external objects exist, and itself also. But, in proving their existence, does it imagine them? Not at all. They were already actually in being; and the soul does not invent them, either in imagination, or veritably. Hence, 'to prove the existence of,' as we find the phrase used above, means only 'to apprehend', that is, 'to certify as existent'. A person resolved on finding the Vedânta rational, may here insist, that the author intends to show nothing more than what he said in the case of the soul, to wit, that ignorance proves its own existence; in other words, that it, already existing, ascertains that it is so. If so, I reply, ignorance is made out to be a verity. As our rationalizer would interpret it, the extract is quite out of place. Further, on his showing, the contradiction which the author deprecates remains intact. Any one who is thoroughly conversant with the Vedânta will acknowledge, that, when its teachers discourse of ignorance after the manner of the verses I have cited, their purpose is, to prove, that ignorance is false—

It is because the case in question is one of 'self-supportedness,' that Vijnâna thus explains 'mutual dependence'.

Aphorism 14 of Book V is included in the above.
just as nacreine silver is—and, therefore, that the soul is essentially ever pure, intelligent, and free.

The Sankshepa-sārīraka is an authority of the first rank, and it may be thought incredible, that it can be so weak as I have represented it to be. In anticipation of misgiving, I add, from the commentary of Purushottama Miśra, the Subodhini, his exposition of the verses in question.—

‘But, one may object, since ignorance, an eternal entity, is, like Brahma, impossible of elimination, how is emancipation, which consists in the elimination thereof, to be effected? Its being eliminable by right apprehension, on the ground of its falseness, is thus established: “In the case of the ignorant one,” etc. “To explain.” Is the relation of ignorance to the ignorant one essential? Or is it imagined? It is not the former: “not of its essence”. Why? “Since, for ignorance to be essential”, etc. If ignorance were in spirit essentially, it would be a true entity: but it cannot abide as true in a thing which is self-luminous intelligence, as spirit is; since light is repugnant to darkness. Again, if ignorance were a property of spirit, its being destroyed would alter the spirit, according to the maxim, “A property, acceding, or seceding, changes its subject.” Moreover, if ignorance were a true entity, the result would be duality. Hence, it is meant, there would be contradiction to the scripture which declares, that spirit is intelligence, unchangeable, and without a second. The latter is admitted: “Assuredly, ignorance”, etc. The facts standing thus, there is no antagonism, even as there
is none between the midday glare and the gloom for which the owl mistakes it. Such is the import.\(^1\)

As appears clearly from the words of the commentator himself, the author intends to establish, that ignorance is altogether false. That the commentator thus understands his intent is purged of all doubt by the illustration of the owl. The darkness which the bird is supposed to recognize, is purely fictitious. In like manner, ignorance, it is maintained, is nothing whatever, and yet imagines itself to exist.

\(^1\) "नन्यनादिष्माब्रह्मस्यांत्यानन्यायां सम्भवात \nकुतस्तनिव्वेतिहपु \nmukti: परम्पराश्च तस्य सिद्धाणोन \nसाधिती अज्ञातममपि । तथाहि अज्ञाय खात्मन्य- \nश्रीनानवयः किं खाभानिक: कल्पितो वा नास्सवं श्यास्सह \nनत्यित । कुत श्यास्सह चेतन्येपि । खाभावत आत्मन्यश्रीनानमस्ति \nचेदः वस्तुमहतम् स्यान् न च खप्रकाशाविदात्मक: वस्तुनि वस्तुतो- \nनजानं वर्तितमहेऽति प्रकाशाविदात्मको विकारङ्गायः । तथाश्रीनानाग्रामश्च- \nक्षेत्र तहि स्यं विनायकदात्मानं विकुर्यान ।

उपयन्यपन्न धर्मी विक्षरोति हि धर्मिनाम् ।

इति न्यायात् । तथाश्रीनात्य वस्तुले द्वेतापतिरिति चितत्वनिविध- 
कार्याद्यवल्मतिविरोध इथ्यः । द्वितीयम्भ्रीकरोति अज्ञातता- 
स्पीति । अपिस्वयः । तथानेहि मध्यन्तिन्द्रालोकमण्डले कौशिक- 
कार्टिकलिपतान्यकार्यदविरोधः स्यादिति भावः ।
I would ask, then, what resemblance there is between ignorance's imagining itself, and the soul's proving the existence of itself and of other objects? But observe, that the author's word prasādhayati, 'proves as existent', is somewhat liable to mislead. In its connexion, it can signify only 'certifies as existent'. It looks, however, as if it had the sense of 'makes', or 'contrives'; and the transition from this to 'invents', or 'imagines', is not very violent. We now see how the author, beguiled by words, came to the conclusion, that the illustration produced by him was a valid proof that ignorance may imagine itself to exist. Deluded himself, he deludes others.

Thus, in one respect, that illustration is inapposite. Still more so is it in another respect. As regards the soul, it exists, and therefore certifies as existent itself and other objects. On the other hand, how can ignorance, if it be nothing, imagine itself, or anything else? This is a sample of the gross absurdities which the Vedāntins acquiesce in; and not only are they not abashed by them, but they are perfectly satisfied with them. For instance, Purushottama Miśra, near the words I have taken from him, says, 'In this system, which maintains that everything transcends explanation, unreasonableness is no objection.'

To accept such views as I have been treating of, supposes abolition of all right judgement. As I observed once before, there are many things pertaining to God, and to other spiritual matters, which our

1 अत्यांसन्सारैयनाय नासनपत्तिदैषणम्।
minds are incompetent to lay hold of, and which only bewilder us, the more we reflect on them. Still, if constraining evidence presents itself for believing those things, we are bound to believe them. But, if we receive as true, things which we cannot help perceiving to be false, what are we not to receive? Why are we not to hold, that Brahma is nothing, and that the soul is nothing? It is for the reason to decide these points; and we are not to imitate the Vedāntins in abnegating reason, as they do, when it suits their purpose.

Utterances similar to that which I have extracted from the Sankshepa-sārīrika, will be found in the Śriddhānta-leśa, among other books. All those works lay it down, that, as the world is false, is imagined by ignorance, and appears only by reason of ignorance, so—the very pivot of the Vedānta system—ignorance is imagined by ignorance, in other words, is nothing, and, from ignorance alone, seems to be something.¹

¹ This doctrine we may find in the Vedānta-sāra even, though not enunciated very conspicuously. At p. 4 of that work we read: अस्पर्शमूतरजी सर्परोपवद वस्तुन्यवस्तवारोपो- शयोप: | वस्तु सचिदानन्दाद्व्रय श्राह | अज्ञानादिसकल- जड़सम्होवस्तु | ‘False imputation is the imagining a false thing in a veritable thing, as a snake in a rope, which, in fact is not a snake. In what is now to be treated of, the veritable thing is Brahma—the existent, intelligence, and joy—without a second. the false thing is the sum total of the inanimate, viz., ignorance and so forth.’

That whereby false things are here imagined in the veritable thing, Brahma, is ignorance. And ignorance itself is reckoned
Let us dwell upon this extraordinary and extravagant doctrine a little longer. I say to the Vedântins: If, in order to make out ignorance to be false, you assert, that it is imagined by ignorance, how does it not occur to you, that, on the supposition of its being nothing, it is impossible for it to imagine anything, either itself, or the world? And whence, if it be nothing, is the appearance, of the false world? Your ready answer is, that you do not pronounce ignorance to be altogether nothing. I ask, what sort of thing is it, then? You reply, that it is an imagination of ignorance. To this I rejoin, that an imagination of ignorance is nothing: and, if it be considered to be something, your labour is all fruitless, since, in that case, the soul forfeits its character of being essentially ever pure, intelligent, and free. To this you say, that ignorance is not nothing, that its being self-imagined proves it to be unreal only from the standing point of true existence, and that it is not shown to be quite unreal. Ignorance is imagined by ignorance, and hence is called apparent;¹ and what is so is not entirely nothing, but possesses apparent existence.

among those false things which are thus imagined. Clearly, therefore, ignorance is held to be self-imagined.

This is plainly the view touching ignorance taken by the author of the Sânkhya Aphorism, and by Vijnâna Bhikshu, his expositor. See the note at p. 354.

¹ The author would here repeat, that he has not come across any passage in which ignorance is said to be apparent, and not practical. His authority, though good of its kind, is only oral. It is shown, however, at p. 355, that it matters nothing, in effect, in the Vedânta system, whether ignorance be of the one sort or of the other.
For existence is of three kinds. That which is nothing whatsoever is known as non-existent; as the son of a barren woman, for example:¹ and ignorance, only if it were allowed to have true existence, would prove fatal to the character of spirit as being, by nature, ever pure, intelligent, and free.

But see to what the Vedântins thus come. On the one hand, they take ignorance to be nothing at all;—for, otherwise, Brahma could not be essentially ever pure, intelligent, and free—and, to prove this very point, they assert, that ignorance is self-imagined. On the other hand, by giving to that ignorance the epithet of apparent, they at once begin to see a little existence in it—just enough to avail for its self-imagination. They come to such a pass, that the term real, since they take it to signify both false and real, is useless towards distinguishing the one from the other. We ask them, whether, in their apprehension, that which they declare to be apparent really exists; for, if it does not, it can do nothing. Yes, it really exists, they tell us, but as apparent. What can be done for such reasoners? What words can we employ to convey our meaning to them, and to discover to them what is real and what is false, in other words, what is and what is not? Our only course, it seems to me, is, to discuss with them the subject of their three kinds of existence, the true, the practical, and the apparent, and to point out to them the error of those distinctions.

¹ See the second note on p. 227.
CHAPTER IX

Examination of the Tenet of the Vedāntins, that there are Three Kinds: of Existence. Ignorance cannot be False, and, therefore, the Ignorant Soul cannot be one with the Supreme Spirit.

Before I criticize the doctrine of three kinds of existence, I would bespeak from the Vedāntin the strictest attention. Without it, he will never be able to get at the truth. Let him lay aside his usual habits of thought for a short hour; and, while listening to what I have to offer, let him take account of his present consciousness.

When you, Vedāntin, are assured, with respect to a given thing, that it indeed is, you have a conviction, that its existence is real. And did you ever feel, that the real existence of one thing, recognized by you as existing, was different from the real existence of any other thing so recognized? Do not all things which you perceive to exist at all, approve themselves to exist in one and the same manner? Again, when a thing appears to you to be non-existent, does it not appear to you to be simply and altogether so, and nothing more or less? It results, that whatever is is,
and that whatever is not is altogether not—with no room for a third condition. How, then, can you prove various sorts of existence?

But here the Vedāntin's philosophical prejudice gets the better of him; and he declares, that he has a consciousness of sundry sorts of existence: for he says, that, when he mistakes a rope for a snake, he becomes conscious of apparent existence;¹ it appertaining to such a snake. When, however, you commit such a mistake, does the existence of the snake seem to you different from that of a jar, or the like? Does not the existence seem to be, in both instances, equally real? Undoubtedly, it does. How, then, is it made out, that, in mistaking a rope for a snake, you become conscious of a second kind of existence? You will reply, that, by reason of mistake, you look upon the snake's existence to be like that of a jar, or similar thing; but that they who know, that the object before you is a rope, call the snake, seen by you, apparent: and, on that account, to their apprehension, your consciousness concerns an apparent existence. Let them apprehend as they may, what do you apprehend? You are then conscious of the one sort of existence that you are habitually conscious of. As for the impression of the lookers-on, do they see any description of snake? Not at all. They are perfectly satisfied, that no snake is there. So, neither has a man labouring under mistake, nor one that does not so labour, any consciousness of apparent existence; nor can either of them prove such a thing to be. You

¹ See pp 232, etc.
THREE KINDS OF EXISTENCE

will reply, that you are constrained to call such a thing apparent, 'for, otherwise, how shall we name a thing that is not, and yet appears; as a snake surmised in a rope?' But how idle to trouble yourself about naming that which never had any being! That which is not, but only seems, through error, to be, is altogether non-existent, and why should you name it?

But the Vedāntins say, that, when one mistakes a rope for a snake, the mistake is one of perception. Perception, however, cannot take place without the connexion of an object and an organ of sense. Hence, if, in the case instance, you did not grant, that there was some sort of snake, there would be nothing for the eye to have connexion with, and there would be no mistake of perception.¹ My reply is, that the mistake in question is not perceptual, but inferential. Our senses can take cognizance of the qualities of things, as their colour, taste, length, etc., etc., but of nothing beyond these. When, therefore, a man mistakes a rope for a snake, he merely cognizes, with his eye, something long; and there is no mistake in this. And then he infers, that the something long is a snake. But the fact of being a snake is not invariably concomitant² with length; for many things besides snakes are long. Hence, since the reason—the length—is fallacious, the inference—that a snake is present—is erroneous. The mistake of supposing a snake to be seen being, accordingly, not a mistake

¹ See the passages from the Vedānta-paribhāṣā, pp. 10 and 13, quoted at pp. 232 and 233.
² This phraseology is that of the Nyāya.
of perception, it is not necessary to hold that a snake is produced.

You, Vedāntins, give to objects of mistake the designation of apparent. But mistake is where there is no object, and yet the notion of it. Consider, now, what are the requisites that make mistake to be mistake? In the first place, there is no object. in mistake an object is wanting. The notion of it is all that remains; and beyond this there is nothing. Whence, then, do you get an apparent object? Is it brought forth by a mere notion? Know, for a certainty, that, when a man mistakes a rope for a snake, there are only two things. One is the rope; and the other is, the man’s mistake in surmising it to be a snake. There is nothing else; and there never was; and there never will be.

Hearing this, the Vedāntin asks, in great astonishment, whether apparent things are altogether non-existent. He wishes to know, what difference there is left between such objects and the son of a barren woman.¹ Why do you think, I ask, that there is any?² But there is, he insists, an immense difference; for that apparent things are, once in a while, surmised by people, whereas no one ever surmises the son of a barren woman. My reply is, that the difference is merely one of surmise, not of object. The son of a barren woman is not surmised, for the obvious reason that, whoever knows what is meant when a barren woman is spoken of, is aware that she is

¹ See the first note in p. 227.
² See near the end of the passage from Pārthasārathi Misra, at the foot of pp. 228–30
a woman without a son. What wonder, if no one surmises such a son! And so, can one who knows a given thing to be a rope ever mistake it for a snake? He alone who does not know it to be a rope, so mistakes. Similarly, one who does not know what is intended by a barren woman, may take her to be a mother. How you encumber a simple matter with difficulties!

Let it be, the Vedántin here concedes, that a rope mistaken for a snake, and nacre mistaken for silver, and like things, have been shown to be quite unreal. But he will still maintain, that the things of the world cannot be so. For, he will say, we have dealings with them; and for this reason—though, like apparent things, they are imagined by ignorance and our learned men believe them to be apparent—for the reader apprehension of the uninformed, they are called practical. If they were altogether unreal, how could we deal with them? In reply, I ask, whether the dealing is real, or unreal? The Vedántin answers, that it is practically real, and yet not indeed real. And does he not call it ignorance-imagined? He does, he says. And what does he mean by that term, which he applies to practical dealing and to things practical? Does he mean appearing, by reason of ignorance to exist? Or, derived from a substance termed ignorance, after the manner of a germ from a seed? To this interrogatory he may return one or other of the following answers. If he speaks from the promptings of common sense, he may say, that 'ignorance-imagined' means 'appearing, by reason of ignorance, to have existence'. On the other hand, should he be thoroughly ensnared by the
phraseology of the Vedānta, he will probably say, that it signifies 'derived from ignorance,' or illusion—an unintelligent substance, and the material cause of the world, like the 'nature' of the Sānkhya scheme. If such, I say to him, be the case, the existence of ignorance and of ignorance-imagined things does not differ from that of Brahma. And why, then, do you not call practical dealing and things practical indeed real? If you reply, that things sprung from illusion are denominated, in your peculiar language, practical only, and that the distinction of true is restricted to Brahma, I have to say, that, by these terms, you discriminate by class, not by existence; and thus your divisions of existence fall to the ground. In like manner the Naiyāyikas style some things limited in dimension, and others, unlimited; and, again, some, terrene, and others, igneous, etc.: and is difference as to existence thereby implied respecting them? And do you mark any difference as to existence, by calling, technically, and so only, one object true, and another, practical? Both are alike real. And, since both are real what becomes of the dogma of monism, or nonduality? Can monism be established by simply showing, that two things are different in kind? If so, the Naiyāyikas, no less than you, are monists; for they hold, that Īśvara differs, in very many respects, from everything else.

Further, if ignorance does not mean mistake, how is this world got rid of by knowledge? For nothing except what is mistaken is falsified thereby. But, if the world be made out of ignorance, as a jar is made out of clay, knowledge can never do away with the
THREE KINDS OF EXISTENCE

world. When I find out, that what I mistook for a snake is a rope, the supposed snake is dispelled: but what knowledge is such that it can do away with a jar which stands before me? Take a club and break it, and it is destroyed, to be sure. Knowledge, however, cannot destroy it. And, as the world is not falsifiable by knowledge, so your material cause of the world, illusion, if it be not one with mistake, is not to be got rid of by knowledge; and then the soul's connexion with the world, and remaining in bondage, are real, and, therefore, the soul cannot be Brahma. The sense of the term ignorance being paltered with, everything, with you, is inverted. The authors of your system must, by 'ignorance', originally have intended 'mistake',¹ when they spoke of the world as being ignorance-imagined, and by this epithet they meant to mark things as seeming, by reason of mistake, to have existence. Subsequently, entrapped by sophistry, they began to take a different view of those expressions. Had they not understood them in the way I have shown, the falseness of the world, and monism, and the removableness of ignorance by knowledge, etc., would never have been suggested to them. By this time, indeed, it will be conceded, that the phrase 'ignorance-imagined' can endure no sense but that which I attach to it. Accordingly, since it means 'appearing, because of ignorance, to

¹ Such being the only natural and intelligible conception of, ajnāna, 'ignorance', regarded as the imaginer of false objects. Śankara Āchārya, not entirely disengaged from this conception, could, as we have seen, speak of 'ignorance' as one with 'mistake', though in the teeth of his own doctrine.
exist', how can a thing so called exist? That which is not, but appears to be, can be said to seem, from ignorance, to exist. As for what is, and appears to be, it does not seem, from ignorance, but from knowledge, to have existence. How can a thing of the former description have existence? Does ignorance bring it forth, as a snake produces eggs? As, in discussing the subject of the apparent, I remarked, so now I repeat, that, when one says a thing is not, but is cognized, one denies its existence and affirms only the cognition of it, beyond which there is nothing. How, then, can your practical be established? And, as you call practical things ignorance-imagined, so you call practical dealing likewise; whence it follows, that the latter also is unreal. Then, in order to account for such practical dealing—unreal, and seeming, because of ignorance, to exist—what necessity is there for supposing any kind of real existence in that with which it is concerned? If a man has dreamed, that he mounted a horse, is there any need of his attributing any kind of existence to such horse? In short, to be consistent, you ought to regard the things of the world as altogether non-existent, just like nacreine silver and the son of a barren woman.

According to your notions, the difference between your three species of objects turns on cognition. There is invariable cognition, occasional cognition, and the absence of cognition. Such are the characteristics of those three species. To the first belong the things of this world; to the second, nacreine silver and the like; and, to the third, the son of a barren woman. But do not suppose, that these objects there-
fore differ among themselves. It is true, that, even to objects purely imaginary we are obliged to give names, and, if the cognition of one such object differs from the cognition of another, it is permissible, on account of that difference to attach different names to those objects. Hence, if you only denominated one class of nonentities practical, and another class, apparent, I should not blame you What I find fault with you for is this, that the terms practical and apparent suggest to you two separate kinds of real existence.

Now I wish to explain the nature of existence briefly, and to point out how you err concerning it. Consider, that, when you affirm, as regards what you call a true, a practical, or an apparent, object, that it is; in so affirming, you acknowledge, that its existence is; in all three cases, of the same description. What, then, becomes of their difference as to existence, which you affirm? If you say to yourself, that those objects themselves are of different sorts, namely, true, practical, and apparent, and that, therefore, they differ with respect to existence, I assure you, that this is a mistake. Let it be granted, that they are different, of different species: this fact does not concern their existing, any more than does the fact, that the Naiyāyikas divide certain things into limited and unlimited, establish, that those things have various sorts of existence. If the difference you contend for were a reality, it would be based on mental premises. Thus, when we say, that salt water is different from sweet, we can both conceive the ground of the difference, and we can express it in words. But, when you say, concerning objects of three kinds, true, etc.,
that they are, do you picture to yourself any foundation for their existing diversely? Do not say, that there are some objects which really differ, but yet the grounds of their differing are not to be known; and that, in like manner, the ground of the difference between the existences belonging to true and other things is so subtile as to be impossible of discovery. It is only those things that you are not fully acquainted with, of which you can allege, that you are unacquainted with the ground of their differing. Of whatever things you are certain, whether from perception, from inference, or otherwise, that it is, you know the existence of that thing already. It may be, that you are ignorant of its nature, still you are not ignorant of its existence. However you came by your information, as soon as you know, that a thing is, you are fully aware of its existence. Similarly, if you are sure, that what you style true things, and practical, and apparent, are, you are fully informed of their existence; and, if they are discrepant as to existence, you must know how they differ. If you do not know how they differ, but if it is clear, from your applying 'is' to each of them, that they all appear to exist in one and the same way, what reason have you for speaking of three species of existence?

If you have understood me hitherto, listen a little further. You said, that you believe in different existences of true, practical, and apparent objects, because those objects themselves differ mutually; and you remember my reply, based on a concession.¹

¹ See pp. 363–4.
But now I protest against your classification of objects, heretofore granted for argument's sake. Unlike the Naiyāyika division of things into limited and unlimited, it is grounded simply on your supposed difference in the nature of the existence of the aforesaid objects; and it falls to the ground with the fall of that difference.

I have now to say, that, even though you proved the world to be imagined by ignorance, and false, still you should not call that ignorance false. When, to make out ignorance to be false, you style it ignorance-imagined, does it not occur to you, that, if it were false, that is to say, no entity, it could not exercise imagination? In evasion of this question, you lay down, that ignorance, though ignorance-imagined, and, therefore, not real from the standing point of true existence, is not altogether nothing; it being apparent. What can be replied to such an absurdity? Whatever is ignorance-imagined, and, by consequence, not indeed real, is a sheer nonentity, and can imagine nothing.

Sometimes, the Vedāntins declare, even things that owe their origin entirely to mistake, and are false, are able to produce effects. For instance, what is seen in dreams foreshows, it is said, good and evil.\(^1\) Here, too, in my opinion, the Vedāntins, from want of right

\(^1\) तथासिपि स्मर्यतु वस्तु खगनिवासिनः । सूक्ष्मकं हि सवयेव जागृतस्तत्त्वार्थस्विद्ये ॥

'Nevertheless, ye dwellers in Elysium, a thing seen in a dream certainly becomes indicative, that something real, belonging to the waking state, will be accomplished.'
consideration, are wide of the truth. Things that we see in dreams do not foreshow, as they allege they do; for such things are nonentities. Dreams themselves may foreshow; and these are entities. The object of a misconception is false; but the conception itself is true. When a man mistakes a rope for a snake, and is put in bodily fear, we are not to understand, as the Vedāntins do,¹ that the snake—for that is nothing—but that the man's misconception, which is entitative, is the cause of his fear.

By all these considerations it is proved, that, if, as

This couplet is from the Brahma-gītā, a part of the Sūtasaṃhitā. No MS of it is at present accessible to the writer.

¹परिकल्पितोऽपि सकलवृत्तथा
गुह्रेव पूर्णमवबोधयति ।
परिकल्पितोऽपि मरणाय भवेत्
उरगो यथा न तु नभो मल्लिनम् ॥

'The preceptor alone, albeit imaginary, because all-sapient, gives instruction to the full; as it is the snake, albeit imaginary, and not the befouled ether, that operates for death.'

The sense is this. Among things imagined, some may produce effects which are beyond the power of other things. Thus, a man may be fatally terrified by a rope mistaken for a snake; whereas the foul ether, an object equally chimerical, cannot work to the same end. Just so, an instructor, no less than all other men, is imaginary and false; and yet he is able to instruct, which other men are not.

In Hindu opinion, the ether is always essentially colourless and pure, and only from error is supposed to possess hue. The ignorant, it is said, think the blueness of the sky to be the befoulment of ether.

The couplet cited above is from the Sakshepa-sāriraka.
the Vedāntins maintain, the regarding the world as true, and the believing oneself to be a soul, are the result of ignorance, then that ignorance cannot be false, but must be true; and hence, we are indeed ignorant, and, consequently, we cannot be the Supreme Spirit.

And just as true are our sinfulness and misery. For there is sin in one's desiring or doing anything which one counts to be wrong; and there are many things which, though we so count them, we all desire and do; and we are, likewise, all conscious of misery. In treating of the Sānkhyā system, I have shown, that our consciousness of cognition, will, activity, misery, etc., cannot be an error. Since, then, our souls are sinful, and subject to misery, for this further reason, they cannot be the Supreme Spirit; which, as the Vedāntins confess, is ever pure, and essentially joy.

After adverting to a single topic more, I shall bring this chapter to a close. When I was discussing the Sānkhyā, I set down what would be enough to refute the Vedānta as well. I said, that our consciousness of cognition, will, etc.—however we may err as to other things—cannot be erroneous. Consequently, even were I to allow the correctness of the Vedāntins' allegation, that to regard the world as true is a misconception, yet so to regard it cannot be false; since we are conscious, that we have a cognition of the world's truth: a cognition which the Vedāntins call erroneous. I repeat, that, if such a misconception as that just spoken of actually infects us, we cannot be the Supreme Spirit. Thus, also, am I able to answer the Vedāntins. It was necessary, however, to examine
and to expose, from various aspects, the arguments they produce to prove the falsity of ignorance; for therein, as I have before said, consists the whole strength of the Vedānta doctrine. It was of main importance, also, to refute their errors touching the subject of existence, those errors being most prejudicial to them in several ways. The labour I have expended on this head should not, then, be viewed as uncalled for.
CHAPTER X

Examination of the Vedāntin's Emancipation; Proof, that the Vedānta does not deserve to be called Theistic; and a few Words on the Faculty of Judgement, its Power, and its Use.

When the notion is refuted, that the soul is identical with Brahma, the refutation follows, by implication, of the notion, that, when the soul attains to right apprehension, viz., the regarding itself as one with Brahma, it becomes liberated from all error, and, being Brahma realized, is emancipated. For, since the soul is not at all Brahma, its thinking itself to be so is not right apprehension, but the extreme of misapprehension; and, for thus thinking, instead of deserving to be emancipated, it deserves severe punishment.

1 This word is a makeshift; and so is 'reflection', used at pp. 336-7, and elsewhere. It is impossible to express in rational language what becomes of the soul, when Vedāntically emancipated. From all eternity it has been Brahma, and therefore has not to become Brahma, or again, to be restored to Brahmahood. Nor does it realize Brahmahood; no more as, in the state of emancipation, it is void of all consciousness. A Vedāntin does not hesitate to say ब्रह्मव सन्न ब्रह्मव भवति अविष्कृतक विमुच्यते | 'Being already Brahma, himself, it becomes Brahma himself', and 'Free already, it is freed.'
Again, the emancipation of the Vedāntins is practically like that of the Nyāya and others among the Systems. In these, as I have said before, emancipation is, to be delivered from all pain, and to remain like a stone, utterly void of intelligence. And in this there is no experience of happiness. Precisely such is the condition of emancipation according to the Vedāntins, however it may seem, from their language, that it is attended by happiness; for they describe Brahma as being intelligence and bliss. To be emancipated is, with them, realization of Brahmahood; and from this it should seem, that the emancipated must be happy. I have shown, however, that their Brahma is only nominally intelligence and bliss. He is intelligence that cognizes nothing, and bliss without fruition of happiness. What hope is there, that the soul would be happy, if it came to such a state as this?

We know, that all their doctrines concerning Brahma and the soul are most absurd; but, accepting them as set forth, we can even show, that their emancipation amounts to annihilation. They say, that the soul is false. If so, it can never actually be restored to Brahmahood. For a false thing cannot become true. So long as misapprehension endures, such a thing exists as a semblance; and, when right apprehension accedes, it vanishes away. To disappear into nothingness is, then, all that the hapless soul could attain to by acquiring right apprehension.

Hitherto I have been taken up with the leading doctrines of the Vedānta; and I have passed by nothing of main import. And now I venture to ask any thoughtful man, whether this scheme deserves to be
called theistic. Viewed superficially, it has, I allow, a guise of theism; and yet, when investigated critically, I cannot see, that it is anything but a sort of atheism.

The distinctive article of theism is, the belief in a God: but God is eliminated from the Vedanta. Its Brahma is neither creator of the world, nor its preserver, nor its lord; in short, the world is out of relation to him. Let the Vedântins give to such an object the title of Brahma, or that of Supreme Spirit; still their doing so does not make them theists. Greatness does not consist in bearing a great name; but he that does mighty deeds, and is endowed with extraordinary excellences, is great, and he alone. Why is God spoken of as supremely great? Because He created all, and regulates and governs all, and because He is omnipotent and omniscient, and endowed with divine attributes. Again, why is it proper for us, and incumbent on us, to honour and to love Him? Because He made us, and because we are His, and because He is our benefactor, and because, by reason of His adorable perfections, He claims the homage of our hearts. The religion which does not recognize in the Supreme the characteristics thus enumerated, does not really recognize God; and the worship which it teaches is not the worship of God. To devise a strange imagination, and to denominate it Brahma and Supreme Spirit, will in nowise benefit the Vedântins.

Moreover, as, to a theistic religion, God and the adoration of Him are essential, so likewise is discrimination between sin and virtue; and this discrimination is ignored by the Vedânta. Sin and virtue are acknowledged, indeed, from the standing point of
practical existence, but, nevertheless, they come to be, in truth, nothing. The ignorant man, consistently with these views, may dread sin, and follow after virtue; but the rightly apprehending man should spurn at both.\(^1\) He has no reason to fear the one, nor any motive for pursuing the other. Wherein, on this score, does the Vedānta differ from atheism? And can any one hope to be advantaged by such a belief?

The Vedāntin would fain make out, by his sophistical arguments, that Īśvara, the world, and so forth are what he calls false. But for all that, he is unable to rid himself entirely of the conviction of their self-evident and undeniable realness. Hence, as I have said, they present themselves to him as verities. To do away with the incongruity involved herein, the Vedāntins have set up their theory of various sorts of existence. The objects above mentioned, Īśvara, etc., which show themselves as real, they allege to belong to the practical, not to the true; and so, by fallacies, they solace their mental disquietude.

My view, that the Vedānta does not merit a place among theistic religions, is based on a sifting of its

\(^1\)यथ नासहंकरं भावो बुद्धियस्य न लिप्यते ।
हलवासपि स इमां लोकान्न धन्ति न निक्यते ॥

'He who has not the notion, that he is a doer, and whose intellect is not involved by works, though he were to slay all these denizens of earth, would not, in fact, slay, or be compromised.'

So runs the Bhagavad-gītā, xviii. 17.

This is a perfectly legitimate deduction from Vedānta premises
leading and fundamental tenets. Its advocates, of course, here take issue with me. According to them, their system countenances the worship of God, and distinguishes between sin and virtue, etc., etc.; and such is their inconsistency, that they teach conformably. The harm they do is, therefore, less than would be done by inculcating overt atheism. Still, any scheme must be most pernicious which is, in truth, repugnant to theism, even though its maintainers do not clearly perceive such repugnance. Those Vedāntins, I have observed, who are naturally least inclined to evil, are least injured by their system. But its effect on those persons who have a strong bias to vice, is, I have likewise observed, such, that no excess of wickedness seems to them wrong. As for the former class, it is, I think, owing to their addiction to devotional exercises, rather than to matters of doctrine, that they are not equally depraved. But let a man give himself up to the Vedānta, and dwell constantly on such thoughts as that he is Brahma, and pure, and that sin and virtue are falsities; be his natural disposition however favourable, his reverence for God must become less, and his desire to discriminate good and evil must grow cold and languid. And the detection of his sins, and humility and grief because of them, how can these and such like, which are most necessary and beneficial to man, be possible to him? Indeed, it is unavoidable but that the Vedānta should work only prejudice to all whom it influences in a lesser degree, certainly, to some than to others: but it cannot improve the fallen nature of any single mortal.
Reason admonishes us, that the true religion is that which meliorates our natural condition; which, surely, with every one of us, stands in great need of amendment. The best of men must be, in the eyes of God, grievously imperfect and sinful. Even they require the remedy of the true Faith. Moreover, no man can love God as he ought. One proof of due love to God is, the avoidance of all sin of whatever description; for sin is that which is opposed to the divine commands, and abhorrent to God. Yet there is no one who has not committed sins innumerable; and the natural man has turned from God, and is on the way to perdition. He wants, then, a religion to instruct him in the knowledge of God, and to lead him to worship and honour Him; and to show the exceeding heinousness of sin, and its terrible consequences, and how, by repentance and prayer, to free himself from its fetters. That religion from which we learn these things must be, we feel, from God. And, for philosophers—themselves corrupt, as being human—to exhort their fellow-men, in contrariety to the teachings of that religion, to regard God as false, to think themselves one with Brahma, and to count sin, and virtue, and their fruits, nonentities, is to administer to a sick man poison, not medicine. Cease, I entreat you, my beloved countrymen, to consider as true a religion which contains such things as these.

I shall conclude with a few words on the faculty of judgement. God has given this to mankind in general; and, by reason of it, men believe, that there is a God, maker of the world; and they know, that
it is good to practise virtue, and wrong to do evil, and what is the fruit of each; and that they should worship God, and secure His favour, and that from His favour springs true happiness. In most cases, such is its force, that, when a man sins, he at once condemns himself for his sin. But, now that man has lapsed from his original condition, his judgment is not so perfect, or so sure, as it was at the beginning of the world. As concerns things of a primary character, it speaks the same language to almost all; but, immediately on arriving at particulars, we mark a great discrepancy. Hence the origin of so many religions and sects. And the judgement of a man who accepts a false religion becomes more depraved than it would be otherwise. Nevertheless, let a man’s religion be ever so far from the truth, and let his reason be ever so perverted by the lessons he has heard from his youth up, there are certain things in respect of which that man’s better judgement will believe his doctrines. Thus is it with the Vedāntins. There is no doubt, that the fundamental dogmas of the Vedānta are opposed to all godliness, and are subversive of the principles of morality. It is perfectly certain, that, according to them, one is not called upon to fear and to adore God, to detest sin, and to love virtue. Inconsistently enough, however, there are Vedāntins who are earnestly devoted to the worship of what they take to be God. This comes from their following the dictates of their better judgement, the voice of God, rather than their own chief tenets. For the same reason it is, that, in the opinion of the Vedāntins, even he who has acquired what they call
right apprehension is not to do as he lists, but must
eschew vice. In several other particulars, too, the
Vedāntins are seen to follow common sense, in contra-
vention of their system. For instance, since they
profess to regard the soul and the Supreme Spirit as
one, why should they hesitate to allow, that the latter
is changeable and impure? But not only do they
hesitate here, but they refuse to admit, that the
Supreme Spirit is other than ever pure, intelligent,
and free. To seem to reconcile this position with
the rest of their scheme, costs them great labour.
Powerful indeed must be the natural instinct of truth,
if, in spite of the causes tending to debilitate it, which
I have lately spoken of, it still asserts its prerogative,
with some effect, among very unbelievers. Even
through their mouths it bears witness against false
document, and in behalf of God and the truth.

God be praised, that He has suffered us to retain
thus much of this illumination; it being this alone
that serves as a safeguard and moral guide to such
men as are ignorant of the true religion. Except
for it, no one can tell to what depth the human race
would not have become degraded; so surcharged are
false religions with error, so far do they militate
against the majesty and purity of God, and so
confused and imperfect are their principles of right
and wrong. The reason, as we now find it, is, how-
ever, inadequate to lead us to the way of salvation,
or to purify our corrupt nature. For these ends we
must have recourse to the word of God. And, as
regards this word, when presented, the reason, once
more, is of great use, in enabling us to test it, and
to recognize it for what it professes to be. Moreover, such is the efficacy of the word of God, that, as an inquirer goes on studying it, provided he brings to that study due perseverance, impartiality, humbleness, and abnegation of self, his judgment daily becomes more and more defecated; and it enables him to distinguish clearly between what is true and what is false in matters of religious belief. But the result will not be thus, unless he applies himself to the search of Holy Writ in the way I have specified. For there are many truths which, though at the first blush they revolt the mind, are seen, after patient investigation, to be quite in accord with all that is reasonable and right.

The true religion is now accessible to the people of India. May God, in His infinite mercy, grant, my dear countrymen, that you quench not the divine light which He has lighted in your breasts, that, on the contrary, you may follow its leading; that you meekly and patiently try, by it, the Christian Scriptures; that you take hold on their priceless promises; and that, in the end, you may inherit, as your everlasting portion, the joy of the Heavenly Kingdom.
List of the Principal Sanskrit Books Quoted in this Volume


*Siddhānta-muktāvalī*, by the same, a commentary on the *Bhāṣā-parichhṛtha*, and printed with it.

*Tarkāmṛta*, by Jagadīśa Tarkālakāra Bhaṭṭāchārya. MS.

*Tarka-saṅgraha*, by Annam Bhatṭa. MS.

*Tarka-dīpikā*, by the same; a commentary on the *Tarka-saṅgraha*. MS.

*Vaiśeṣika-sūtropakāra*, by Śankara Miśra. MS.

*Dinkākara*, by Bālakṛishṇa and his son Mahādeva Bhatṭa Dīnakāra. MS.


*Sānkhyā-sara*, by Vijnāna Bhidkṣu. MS.

*pātanjala-bhāṣya-vārttika*, or *Yoga-bhāṣya-vārttika*, by Vijnāna Bhidkṣu. MS.

*Sāstra-dīpikā*, by Pārthasārathī Miśra. MS.

*Pūrva-mīmāṁsārtha-saṅgraha*, by Pārākṣika Bhāṣkara. MS.

*Bhāṭṭa-dīpikā*, by Khanda Deva. MS.

Śāṅkara Achārya's commentaries on the leading Upanishads, with Ānandajñāna's—or Ānanda Giri's—annotations thereon. Edition in the *Bibliothece Indica*. 


Brahma-sutra-bhashya, or Sārīraka-sutra-bhashya, and the commentary on it; by Sankara Achārya and Rāmānanda Sarasvatī respectively. Unfinished edition in the Bibliotheca Indica, and MS.

Bhagavad-gītā, or Īśvara-gītā, with Śrīdhara Svāmin’s commentary, the Subodhini. Bombay lithographed edition.

Ashtāvakra-gītā, attributed to Ashtāvakra the Muni. MS.

Brahma-gītā, a section of the Sūta-sañhita.
Śvā-gītā, an episode in the Padma-purāṇa. MS.

Sankshepa-sārīraka, by Sarvajnātma Muni. MS.
Subodhini, by Purushottama Miśra; a commentary on the Sankshepa-sārīraka. MS.

Vedānta-sūkhamani, a commentary on the Vedānta-paribhāṣā, by Rāmakṛishna Dikshita. MS.

Viveka-chudāmani, attributed to Śankara Āchārya. MS.


Tattva-bodha, anonymous, printed at the end of the Atma-bodha.

Hastamālaka, imputed to Śankara Āchārya. It is printed at the end of the Vedānta-sāra, etc., Calcutta edition of Śaka, 1771.

Jīvan-muktī-viveka, by Mādhava Āchārya. See p. 29.
Siddhānta-ratnamāla. See p. 35.

Krishnalankāra, by Achyutakṛishṇa Ananda Tīrtha. See p. 160.


Vidvan-moda-tarangini, by Chiranjīva Bhattāchārya.

Most of the MSS used for this volume belong to the Translator. Accounts of almost all the works referred to are given in A contribution towards an Index to the Bibliography of the Indian Philosophical Systems. Calcutta, 1859.